



现代  
仙侠

# 天剑仙

[胡弓陈辰]  
作品

2013年联袂仙侠频道最新力作

修仙者携宝重生都市，化龙腾飞！

# Genius Sword Immortal

Chapters 151 - 200

---

**by: Feng Yin Zi Chen**

**Translation: [Novel Saga](#)**

**Publisher: [Yuki](#)**

---

# Table of Contents

[Chapter 151 - Look At The God](#)

[Chapter 152 - To the East China Sea](#)

[Chapter 153 - The East China Sea Meet](#)

[Chapter 154 - Asura Tactics](#)

[Chapter 155 - Ye Wentian Sets Out](#)

[Chapter 156 - Luo Feng, Nan Feng!](#)

[Chapter 157 - She Is Called Xiao Yue](#)

[Chapter 158 - Coastal Cliff](#)

[Chapter 159 - Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation!](#)

[Chapter 160 - A Man's Decision](#)

[Chapter 161 - Radical Member](#)

[Chapter 162 - Approaching Hardships](#)

[Chapter 163 - Long Mo'ran's Sword](#)

[Chapter 164 - Bluffing And Blustering](#)

[Chapter 165 - Warm-Blooded Martial Arts World!](#)

[Chapter 166 - Aunt Is Captured](#)

[Chapter 167 - Long Mo'ran Shows Up!](#)

[Chapter 168 - Draws Lightning!](#)

[Chapter 169 - A True Lightning Sword Qi](#)

[Chapter 170 - Self-Discarding Dantian](#)

[Chapter 171 - The Body Of Immortal Arteries, Open Up!](#)

[Chapter 172 - Retribution](#)

[Chapter 173 - Head Of The Clan Returns Alive](#)

[Chapter 174 - Iceberg Islands](#)

[Chapter 175 - Imparting Immortal Techniques](#)

[Chapter 176 - Control A Bit](#)

[Chapter 177 - Unusual Cold](#)

[Chapter 178 - Yin Soul Fake Body Technique](#)

[Chapter 179 - Coral Cluster](#)

[Chapter 180 - Bloodstained East China Sea](#)

[Chapter 181 - Ye Feng's Stage!](#)

[Chapter 182 - Underwater Speed](#)

[Chapter 183 - An Extremely Cold Ice Wall](#)

[Chapter 184 - Star Arrow](#)

[Chapter 185 - An Exorcist](#)

[Chapter 186 - A Fierce Battle In The Rainy Night](#)

[Chapter 187 - Plundering Equipment](#)

[Chapter 188 - Long Distance Invisible Needles](#)

[Chapter 189 - Broken Magical Crossbow](#)

[Chapter 190 - Slaughtering God Ghost Hand](#)

[Chapter 191 - A Witty Shark](#)

[Chapter 192 - Encountering Interception](#)

[Chapter 193 - Quite Dreadful](#)

[Chapter 194 - A Battle!](#)

[Chapter 195 - Suppressing Soul Sound Wave](#)

[Chapter 196 - A group of Long Wan'er](#)

[Chapter 197 - Misses It Just By A Half Inch](#)

[Chapter 198 - Dragon Against Dragon!](#)

[Chapter 199 - The Last Opportunity \[Blast 1\]](#)

[Chapter 200 - Ye Feng? Ye Feng! \[Blast 2\]](#)

## Chapter 151 - Look At The God

---

Ye Feng left the hearing scene and soon arrived at the entrance of the court.

But by proliferating his Soul Search Technique, he could still feel the current situation inside the hearing room. When Xie Min and Xie Chengye took initiative and acknowledged their charges on their own, immediately the entire trial room burst into a chaotic situation, even the old man, Lin Rentian couldn't keep his calm.

Originally an adequate arrangement had been done beforehand for this kind of matter, however, these three people were truly morons, how foolishly they admitted their guilt. This was not at all advantageous for them, by any chance did they want to be thrown behind bars?

Since the Procuratorate's people were still on the scene, naturally, Lin Rentian couldn't make any obvious action that might prove his noticeably biased move. Therefore, after the acknowledgement of guilt done by Xie Min and Xie Chengye, helplessly Lin Rentian made the record, after interrogating a series of specific circumstances, promptly he passed the verdict.

As per the national law of China, there was no such charge like hiring a person to murder, therefore now that Xie Min and Xie Chengye had admitted their crime, so were convicted of "intentional homicide" and were sentenced to life imprisonment, in addition to stripping them of their political rights for the lifetime.

So far as Li Dagaou's intentional homicide, as well as Su Xinchang's judgement, was concerned, processing was postponed for another day retrial, because it wasn't the main case. Furthermore, it was quite certain that Li Dagou would be sued and would at least suffer the fate of life imprisonment. However, since he had even made the perjury charge of the first class, so it might possible that he would get death penalty.

Talking about Lin Rentian, he used this case entirely to take revenge from Ye Feng and Su Menghan. If because of this case, his solemn and respectful image was defiled in front of the public, then not any gain could be able to make up for his this huge loss.

Therefore, he was determined that he had to carry out resolute and unbiased processing at any cost now. On that basis, it was fair if he didn't sentence death penalty to Xie siblings.

Once the statement of the verdict came out, Lin Rentian felt extremely unhappy as he thought that his son was still in the hospital, even his treatment didn't turn out effective. This thought suddenly darkened his complexion and he became more and more unsightly .....

Seeing Xie Min and Xie Chengye under arrest, Su Menghan's tears rolled down her face. She couldn't repress the joy blooming in her heart. She quickly ran out of the trial room and went straight to Ye Feng, so as to immediately report him the good news.

However, there were also several people present in the courtroom, whose facial expression had already tremendously changed.

One of them was Xie Pinghui, burning with fury, he tightly clenched his fist, suddenly his blue veins stuck out and became clearly visible. The Xie people, who were already in blank dismay, were also totally unable to digest this sudden incident. Xie Pinghui was also not in the condition to properly consider this incident, how his children could be so stupid and could actually admit their guilt on their own!

This was an intentional homicide, it wasn't a fun, was it? Moreover, this case had also been concealed for almost six years, therefore it became a more serious crime! The story didn't end here, although Xie siblings had acknowledged their guilt, but no matter how good the relationship was between Lin Rentian and Xie people, Xie Pinghui was still unable to protect his children. Besides this, it was also impossible to use his all means and strength to protect them.

It was simply crazy!

How did these two fools take birth in his Clan? This time, Xie Pinghui



wanted to do everything to get these two fools out of this thing. Even though it was Xie Clan, still the money needed to do some arrangements and set them free was quite a lot, and still, there was no guarantee that they would turn out 100 percent successful.

Nearby standing Li Dagou also understood that the matter was far from good, therefore he wanted to just find a propitious opportunity to escape, however soon he was also grabbed by the security guards. Now there was no way he could escape. Deep inside his heart, he was constantly cursing Xie Min and Xie Chengye for their stupidity. For him, these two big fools were really the big suckers.

Moreover, Xie Chengye's subordinates were already in a perplexed state and were looking at each other in blank dismay. So it seemed that the declared result was something which they hadn't expected at all. In their hearts, Xie Chengye was not only the senior official, but also a good buddy, with an extremely high sense of loyalty and responsibility. Then how could he get involved in this incitement to murder incident a few years ago?

Could it be that they had really misjudged Xie Chengye until now?

They thought that how foolishly they helped him twice while dealing with Ye Feng and Su Menghan. It didn't take long for them to understand that they were really wrong, they were gravely mistaken. Originally they thought it was Xie Chengye who was being bullied, but now it clearly appeared that they really helped a tyrant in carrying out his evil deeds!

This boy Ye Feng, after all what was his identity? Not only he was very strong, but it also seemed that everything was under his control. At such a critical moment he stood up and shouted, immediately making Su Xinchang and the other two people kneel down and acknowledge their crime ... ..

Su Menghan's relatives were also no exception. Her maternal relatives, including Huang Ande, were similarly in a shocking phase at the sight their eyes saw just now.

This incident really stood shocking for them, not only that two hundred thousand money got slipped away from Huang Ande's hands, but most likely he also committed a perjury charge. The current situation of Huang Ande was probably like he tried to gain an advantage, but ended up worse off!

“That lowly slut!”

All of a sudden Huang Ande's wife flew into a rage and started acting hysterically, also completely refused to see the facts, her hatred for Su Menghan also got multiplied! In her opinion, Su Menghan was a clever seductress, who not only used to seduce men everywhere but also used to harm their Clan miserably.

She must go to bring back some compensations from Su Menghan before departing!

Actually, she hadn't thought that this matter would, later on, turn out like this and reach such a critical point, who was the main culprit ... ..

On the other hand, naturally, the sudden occurrence of this thing also piqued the mood of some people present on the scene, they were Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi, who were very much delighted with this judgement.

“What's this all about, simply inconceivable .....

Xiao Qi saw Xie Min and Xie Chengye were taken away, which made her feel somewhat strange, it was really shocking and unbelievable.

“Why don't you go and ask Ye Feng about this?”

Lin Shiqing's mind was already clearly aware that although these three people acknowledged their guilt on the own, but actually it happened right after Ye Feng shouted on the scene. To say that Ye Feng and this strange phenomenon were totally irrelevant, Lin Shiqing absolutely couldn't accept this point.

Interestingly, this thought wasn't only limited to her mind, there were also several other people, like Xie Clan, Lin Clan, Xie Chengye's subordinates and so on, whose minds were also hit by this thought. When Lin Rentian announced the end of the trial, one after another,

each and every person walked out of the trial room, holding this thought to use all means and inquire about it.

...

By this time, Ye Feng had arrived at the court's entrance.

Now that the trial result had been declared, he didn't have to waste any further second here, he was just waiting for Su Menghan to come out, so that they could return home together. Afterwards, he would try to figure out a way to get rid of Ye Wentian's tight supervision and rush to the East China Sea!

He just stood at the entrance of the court for a while, at the same time proliferated his Soul Search Technique, swept around and suddenly felt something which made him frown immediately. Actually didn't it seem like in the parking lot, some strange situation was going on currently? The whole car was shaking.

This was not the style of Ye Feng to pry into other people's privacy, but he must ensure his safety along with Su Menghan. Therefore to find any suspicious circumstances appearing in his radar, he used to sweep around constantly using his Soul Search Technique, so as to set his mind at rest.

"So actually who are those two individuals?"

Ye Feng swept his Soul Search Technique and suddenly sensed some sort of embarrassing situation.

A red sedan with six passenger seat, inside of which there was a wretched fat man constantly shaking his obese body. And under his body, there was a sexy-dressed woman. They were Hu Meimei and Xie Min's second uncle whom Ye Feng had seen last time in Yanxi Villa District!

Ye Feng recognized them and immediately lost his interest. After a little while, the shaking of the car finally stopped, apparently the things going on between that wretched fat man and Hu Meimei finally ended. After tidying up a bit, they walked out of the car and suddenly their eyes

got stuck on Ye Feng, which brought a contemptuous look on their faces.

“This time that young girl must have falsely accused them, he he.”

The wretched fat man said that while thinking about the beautiful appearance of Su Menghan, and as a result, his saliva almost flowed out.

“Hmm, standing against Xie people and suing them, certainly she doesn’t have the good end.”

Hu Meimei, while holding the arm of that fat man, said that in a somewhat coaxing voice.

Ye Feng was certainly disinclined to pay attention to them.

They walked straight completely ignoring him, it seemed that they wanted to enter the court. However, right at this moment, a voice passed out from the courtroom’s door.

“Ye Feng! Ye Feng!”

It was Su Menghan who ran out first hastily.

All of a sudden the beautiful image of Su Menghan appeared before their eyes and their eyes turned wide open as if they saw something shocking.

“Oh God! Quickly look at the God!”

The fat man and Hu Meimei exclaimed aloud and hastily fell on their knees, in front of Su Menghan!

Upon seeing this, Ye Feng’s corners of the mouth slightly curled upwards, because he had already expected this situation. When he was in Yanxi Villa District, he had used hypnosis on these two people and implanted a thought, making them feel that seeing Su Menghan was similar to seeing the God!

The moment Su Menghan got outside the courtroom, she froze to the spot seeing this strange scene.

What kind of situation was this! The former secretary of Su Xinchang, Hu Meimei and Xie Min’s second uncle, both of them knelt down in front

of her out of the blue, while calling her the God?

Lin Shiqing, Xiao Qi and other groups of people, who were also leaving the courtroom, suddenly viewed this astonishing scene and their eyeballs almost popped out of their head in amazement. Especially Xie Pinghui, his heart was almost blown up.

Just now Xie Min and Xie Chengye had admitted their guilt in the court, wasn't that humiliating enough for Xie Clan, so now why one more Xie person knelt down on his eyes in front of Su Menghan, calling her the God?

This world is really crazy!

Just retired Xie Pinghui couldn't accept this fact and all of a sudden fainted on the spot!

## Chapter 152 - To the East China Sea

---

All of a sudden Xie Pinghui lost his consciousness and fell down on the spot, which also added fuel to the fire and led to an even more chaotic condition in the crowd.

However, upon seeing this, Ye Feng quickly pulled Su Menghan's arm and asked Scar to leave here as quickly as possible.

In the meantime, on the other side, Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi also saw them departing hastily and they promptly advanced towards them since they wanted to catch up with them. However before they could get close to them, the silver BMW car, carrying them, already left the scene, leaving behind those two ladies with bitter face and angrily stamping on the ground.

“This guy Ye Feng, I must investigate about him once properly.”

Lin Shiqing bitterly said, that kid had never respected her, naturally she shouldn't be blamed for being impolite!

“Together we will.”

Xiao Qi promptly added one, this little girl was certainly very much concerned about the masked man all along. And the only clue she had now was Ye Feng, so naturally she would also stay nervous around him.

Lin Shiqing gazed at this lovable best friend of her and helplessly shook her head.

...

They finally returned to the villa, after finished eating lunch, Su Menghan took the initiative and put forward a proposal to help Ye Wentian in massaging his shoulders.

He also thought that his granddaughter-in-law was truly a sensible girl, hence accepted her proposal with great pleasure!

Following the method taught by Ye Feng, she started the circulation of her Zhenqi with her small hands. Shortly after, her comfortable massage made Ye Wentian fall asleep on the spot, his head got tilted and he started snoring right on the sofa.

Quietly, Ye Feng looked upstairs and gradually a mischievous smile took birth on his face, all settled!

Instantly his stature transformed into the invisible mode and the next moment, he sprang out of the villa and promptly moved towards the office building opposite Qingfeng Park, where Scar had already parked the silver BMW car, waiting for him for a long time. Hence, as soon as Ye Feng arrived there, he set out on his journey without further ado!

The two people's routes were already well decided, at first they would go to Shanghai city from Yanjing, then, from there they would advance towards the seashore County town which was located on the seashore of the East China Sea. According to the news, nowadays several public figures from the martial arts world were already assembled there in that seaside County, which was known as Xiangshan County town!

For safety reasons, obviously, Ye Feng couldn't let Su Menghan tag along with them. As the matter stood, one must know the place was already swarmed with the great martial artists, therefore, a little bit of carelessness could easily lead to a life threatening situation for anyone!

Although presently Su Menghan had already learnt Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace under the initial guidance of Ye Feng, but still going to that sort of place was extremely dangerous for her. In case she ran into some evil person like those 'Happily Married Couple of Swords', then obviously it would become impossible for her to escape.

The silver BMW car like a silver streamer, galloped all the way from Yanjing to the southern side, with the maximum speed.

"Scar, how about your recent practice?"

In the car, Ye Feng asked one directly.

"Asura Tactics has already been revolved by me smoothly, however, last

night I tried to comprehend Ghost Shadow Soul Step, however, unfortunately, my level of Cultivation is not that high, because of which my eruption speed is also not fast enough.”

Scar replied while driving the car.

“Hmm, good.”

Ye Feng nodded his head, the period of half a month to comprehend Ghost Shadow Soul Step, and on top on that for that person who had never been in contact with such martial arts practice, was really remarkably good. However, truly speaking Su Menghan had such a talent that in just half a month of her initial training, she had already grasped Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace quite easily.

Obviously, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace was way more difficult than Ghost Shadow Soul Step, which clearly proved that Su Menghan’s talent must be somewhat higher than Scar’s.

“Moreover, I have carefully chosen eight confidants and have also made them practice together. They all are very trustworthy people, while the other people have been disbanded by me.”

Scar continued to report the situation: “Currently, they have begun the revolution of Asura Tactics, however still not a single one of them has appropriately comprehended the style.”

“Well, no need to worry about it.”

Ye Feng thought: “If they continue practising in Yanjing city, it may lead to unnecessary suspicion. So, let’s do it like this, inform them to find some another place to be covert. In addition, must send one million to each one of them.

“One million? Ye elder brother, this ... ..”

Scar felt somewhat awkward, eight people, if one million was sent to everyone, wouldn’t it be eight million altogether? Then their property wouldn’t be actually eroded away!

“Anyway, everyone has a family, isn’t it? This way, they can be



considered to be removed from their worries.

Ye Feng smiled: “As for the money, do not worry, soon we will have a large hit.

That legendary luminous pearl, Ye Feng had already handed over to Ou B, making his father estimate it's appropriate value. During the period of summer vacation, there would be a jewellery trade fair in Yanjing and Ou A had decided to sell it at this trade fair, where he could sell it absolutely at the high price.

As for that legendary luminous pearl of the ancient tomb, regardless of any perspective, Ye Feng could easily claim that the age of that superficial dragon was obviously old, and its ornamental value would certainly be of first-class! The rough estimation was, selling it at 5 or 6 million would absolutely not a big problem, and if the luck would be also at his side, then, it could be easily sold at ten million or even more.

“Then it will be all right, let's do so.”

Scar nodded his head and showed his agreement with Ye Feng's statement.

Just because of the help of Ye Feng, he finally got the opportunity to begin the practice of martial arts, which he had been desiring since ages, then in such case, how couldn't he obey Ye Feng? Moreover, the money was entirely an external thing, he had a belief that for Ye Feng money making ways were quite easy.

According to the massage technique taught by Ye Feng, Ye Wentian must remain asleep atleast for several hours.

During this period, Su Menghan made a phone call, her said words were brimmed with her unwillingness to let him go. But she actually also knew that for Ye Feng, looking for his master was certainly imperative, therefore all she could do rightnow was just stay in Yanjing, otherwise definitely she could get him into trouble.

Therefore, she could only get secretly worried for him.

In the evening, the silver BMW, passing through several provinces,

finally entered the scope of Shanghai city. Because of the hurry, Ye Feng decided that they shouldn't stay in this city, until the Xiangshan County located at the seashore of the East China Sea arrived, in any case, not much distance left.

However, at this time, what he most afraid of was once Ye Wentian would wake up, he would certainly fly into a rage and would try to pursue him, which wouldn't be a fun .....

After entering the scope of Shanghai city, the silver BMW, with the extremely high-speed, galloped towards Shanghai city.

But right at this moment, suddenly Ye Feng's phone rang up, and as he looked down, he noticed that it was a strange landline number. His eyebrows slightly got wrinkled, as if a little doubt had suddenly hit his mind, could it be that Ye Wentian had already come all the way from Yanjing to here just to attack him?

Immediately he hung up the phone, then browsed through the Internet to search something, soon found that the number actually turned out to be the number of the East China Sea's side.

"Who is it?"

Ye Feng pondered for a second and then called the number back.

"Hey, Ye Feng!"

The phone rang and was soon picked up by the other side, a sweet female voice like the sound of an oriole passed on, it was actually Long Wan'er.

"How are you? You scared me, how did you reach the East China Sea?"

At first, Ye Feng felt a little relief, but immediately turned a little anxious on thinking that wasn't Long Wan'er confined to the four walls at her own house by Long Mo'ran? Then how did she run away to the East China Sea?

"My sister-in-law helped me in getting out of there ... .. where are you rightnow? I missed you."

Long Wan'er's voice was really filled with joy, in addition, from her expression it was quite obvious that she had really missed him a lot, making Ye Feng's heart suddenly get hit by a feeling of warmth.

"I also missed you, as soon as I reach the East China Sea, will meet you, just wait for me."

Ye Feng returned one.

"Hmm, I am staying in a hotel near Xiangshan County's flyover, come quickly."

Long Wan'er said that but somewhat shyly, then hung up the phone.

On the other side, while driving the car, unavoidably Scar heard the contents that they talked over the phone and secretly praised Ye Feng in his heart. For him Elder brother Ye was the great Elder brother Ye, wherever he used to go, he always had a beauty accompanying him. Even in the Xiangshan County, already a beautiful woman was waiting for him with her room all open!

While he was busy thinking this, suddenly noticed that a red sports car in the front, quickly fled out, making him hurriedly step on the brake.

Unfortunately, as per the instruction of Ye Feng, the speed of the silver BMW was already incredibly fast, even presently with the extremely fast reaction speed of Scar, he didn't get enough time to fully stop it.

Zi Zi!

The two cars simultaneously hit the steering wheel and finally slightly brushed passed each other. Although they avoided the direct collision, but actually still friction occurred, making the red rear-view mirror of that red sports car hit to fly directly.

"Just stop the car!"

That red sports car immediately stopped, a delightful and interesting to listen female voice passed on, with a touch of indignation.

## Chapter 153 - The East China Sea Meet

---

The silver BMW also stopped.

Ye Feng turned his head and found that there was a matured looking very beautiful woman, clad in red coloured clothes, sitting inside the red sports car. Her whole body was revealing a mature temperament and had approximately 20-30 years old appearance.

Immediately he made a bet, no matter which man it was, once he poured his glance at her, his line of sight would certainly get attracted towards her chest!

Even he himself was no exception at all.

The red dressed beauty had a fiery hot, matured and alluring physique, from top to bottom her striking stature was sparkling with a captivating aura, especially her front two mighty and magnetic peaks, which were wrapped in the red coloured fabric. Those two majestic mountains were sufficient enough to make Ye Feng admit the fact that he had never come across this kind of magnificent thing before until now.

Her beautiful long hair was hanging down her shoulders, but her exquisite and perfectly oval face had a touch of annoyed expression. Very obviously it was because of her beloved sports car, not only it was badly knocked against, but its rear-view mirror was also hit to fly, maybe there would be some other damages as well, because of that she was currently in an extremely foul mood.

However on seeing the silver BMW also stopped, the beauty in red immediately flung the car's door, then got down, while her pair of eyes were unwaveringly fixated at Ye Feng along with Scar. Her anger had also influenced her chest, making it move up and down constantly as if the mighty waves were surging forth.

“Ye elder brother, regarding this, I shouldn't be blamed for.”

Scar was feeling all helpless.

“I’ll get down and discuss with her.”

Ye Feng’s eyebrows slightly wrinkled as he thought that this must be resolved as fast as possible, since he couldn’t afford letting the old man catch up with him.

“This car is Audi TTS-Roadster, probably seven-eight million .....

Naturally Scar already knew that Ye Feng didn’t understand a thing related to automobiles or something related to that, therefore he continued by wrinkling his eyebrows up a bit more tightly : “Certainly, the most important thing rightnow is that woman, it seems that it’s not too good to mess with her ... ..”

“Not to mess with her, then how should this matter be handled?”

Ye Feng chuckled a bit, pushed open the car’s door and directly got out of the car.

As for handling this sort of matter, Scar thought that he was naturally more experienced enough than Ye Feng. However since Ye Feng insisted on to take initiative and also got down the car, so he decided not to meddle with him. In his opinion, Ye elder brother had definitely developed a liking for that beauty in the red, driving the car, therefore he wanted to take advantage of this opportunity to strike up a conversation with her.

If by any chance Ye Feng got to know what was going on in his mind, he might get angry to the extent of spurning blood. As of now, he just wanted to quickly settle this issue, how could he think of striking up a conversation with that beauty at such a crucial moment? Letting Scar handle this matter might take a long time.....

Now that it was quite obvious that the red dressed beauty already wanted to come over and start an argument, therefore Ye Feng took the initiative to stride ahead and do the needful.

“I’m in a hurry.”

Ye Feng observed the rear view mirror that the red Audi car had, which had been hit to fly : “Well, I’ll leave a phone call to you, how much money will be needed to repair your car, I’ll pay you that.

Since he was really in a rush, if he stayed there to let this matter process in its natural pace, then who knew how many days it would take, and when the time came, he might also get caught by the old man Ye.

Hence he must reach the East China Sea before then!

Although his statement was heard by the beauty in the red, but it seemed like a foul trick for her, he was trying to give a phone number and leave this place, how could it be so easy? Although this fellow was riding the seventh series of BMW car, which made it look like he really had a lot of money, but who knew whether this car belonged to him or not? What would she do if she couldn’t find him when the time would come?

“No way, let the traffic police come.”

She stared coldly at him, soon her melodious voice again burst out, which had a touch of arousing maturity : “Hitting a car first, then giving a phone number to settle this matter and leaving the place like nothing happened, how can such a cheap thing really exist in this world?

She leant against the car, then folded her hands and embraced her chest, which was like a grand and fuller pair in the eyes of Ye Feng and was obviously her majestic and impressive looking two peaks. Her peaks set off out, plentifully fuller and upright!

Ye Feng couldn’t control himself from gazing at those two and unfortunately, he was immediately noticed by her seeing her front, making her secretly sneer in her heart : All men are of the same kind, sex maniac.

However right at this moment, he thought of Long Wan’er, who would be still waiting for him in the East China Sea, making him immediately withdraw his line of sight from her two grand peaks.

However he was too disinclined to care about what the beauty was thinking about him, he directly asked one : “Your phone number? I’ll

certainly call you, remember it.”

Actually he didn't want to take responsibility, this incident was right or wrong, who was responsible for it, he didn't want to argue about these matters anymore, as long as he got to know how much money was needed to get her car fixed, he would give a phone call to her and would also compensate to the opposite party.

However, for her, this was an evil trick to obtain her number and was actually considered by her as using the opportunity to start a conversation with her!

“No way, just wait for the traffic police to come over, why are you being so anxious?”

The beauty in the red said that as she shrugged her shoulders, accompanied with a smile, reflecting a look as if very intelligently she dodged his smart trick just now. Using this sort of trick to hit on her and start a conversation with her, by extracting her number smartly like this, this kid was truly a bit too inexperienced.

“Well, then excuse me, I'm a bit in a hurry.”

Ye Feng similarly shrugged his shoulders back, then turned around, immediately his stature flashed and appeared inside the BMW car : “Scar, drive.”

Without thinking anything, Scar instantly hit the accelerator and the silver BMW suddenly soared out!

This sudden incident all of a sudden blew away her mind, this kid, what was he engaged in? To strike up a conversation with her, however without achieving his goal, how could he run away like this?

She stamped her feet bitterly, her mighty fuller chest were also trembling with anger and her heart was also in a very unhappy and dissatisfied state. Actually how careless she was just now that she even let the opposite party run away right before her eyes so easily. However, based on her personality, this matter wouldn't be considered as finished from her end!

What she cared was not the issue of money, rather it was that she couldn't swallow a single breath.

Thus it could be seen that huge chest could also turn out to be a big disadvantage, easily hit by tightness ... ..

“Yanjing's license plate, isn't it great?”

She had remembered the silver BMW's license plate number, however, her heart was still bubbling with a variety of contemptuous feelings. It wasn't like she despised the city Yanjing, the fact was she herself belonged to Yanjing originally, but now she used to work in Shanghai.

If she would still rely on the traffic police to handle this matter, then who knew how many months she would be needed to wait to achieve the desired verdict. Therefore, as for this thing, she finally decided to take this matter completely in her hand and by using her network, finding out the whereabouts of the silver BMW wouldn't remain a big deal for her.

Of course, it was imperative to get her car all repaired first, but since she had really worked hard for two years and had lost everything to buy this car, therefore her heart couldn't bear to see it incomplete.

...

The silver BMW galloped towards the southern direction. All the way it didn't receive anything which could block its way.

And after three hours of high-speed driving, they finally arrived and stopped in Xiangshan County in the East China Sea.

“Scar, you find a place to stay.”

Ye Feng got off the car and said : “If that woman wants to stir up unnecessary trouble, you are responsible for the further processing, however after finished processing, you can go back to Yanjing and then together with your trusted people, find a place for concealment.

“Alright, Elder brother Ye.”

Scar nodded at once, losing a few million for his sake was really nothing for him. However, going back to his eight men and giving one



million to each later on, it was a bit difficult for him rightnow. Although he was the former boss of Heavenly Serpent Gang, but was currently in a poor-stricken condition.....

Without a bit of hesitation, Ye Feng advanced all the way towards the place which was mentioned by Long Wan'er before on the phone call.

The centre of Xiangshan County was relatively quite developed, since all kinds of industrial modernization could be seen there. However, it was just that walking on the streets here was making him have a kind of strange feeling, as if stormy clouds were soon approaching him. Therefore he rightaway swept his Soul Search Technique and immediately felt that in the roadside hotel, there were probably one or two martial artists having shelter in it!

Relying on his Soul Search Technique, he didn't notice any suspicious characters on his way. Soon he arrived in front of a five-star hotel alone.

Long Wan'er had taken shelter here.

Ye Feng thought that shouldn't he get in contact with Nanfang first, anyway, there would be no action tonight, therefore he would surely make a phone call tomorrow early in the morning to ask him how the situation in the East China Sea these days.

He sat on the elevator to ascend the seventh floor, soon he arrived in front of the door of Long Wan'er's room, then he knocked at the door.

"Ye Feng!"

The door opened and a pretty figure immediately appeared before him.

Without waiting a single second for him to respond, all of a sudden he was hauled into the room by her, immediately the door was shut and her fragrant stature tightly got wrapped around him.

## Chapter 154 - Asura Tactics

---

Ye Feng was suddenly pulled into the room, immediately the fragrance the young girl's body was emitting, gently greeted his nostrils, followed by a warm and nice body which was all of a sudden threw into his arms.

Leaning against the door, Ye Feng also drew her close towards himself: "How long have you been here?"

At this moment, like always, Long Wan'er was looking very adorable and lively. In addition, clad in a white short-sleeved shirt, embroidered with a pair of cute little white rabbits, making her look even more captivating.

"Just arrived today."

Long Wan'er joyously said: "Originally my Aunt wanted to live with me in this room, but when you said on the phone that you would definitely come ..... she moved to the next door.

Aunt? Next door?

Subconsciously he proliferated his Soul Search Technique and sensed a woman taking a bath in the next room. A bit alarmed, he withdrew his Soul Search Technique hastily .....

"Then, does your Aunt also know my identity?"

He took back his Soul Search Technique as he asked one.

"She doesn't."

Long Wan'er shook her head: "I told her that Mo Jiuge is going to come today, however even if she knows your identity, still it doesn't matter, she has been always nice to me since my childhood.

"Tell me about her?"

Still wrapping his arms around her, Ye Feng left the door and walked

towards the room, which was quite large, with double beds properly arranged. However, in his eyes, it was nothing but a complete waste.

Although Long Wan'er had a very large room, but did she still need two beds?

They met again, their hearts were already brimming with joyous feeling. However, at this moment, Ye Feng wanted to know that when Long Wan'er's mother was killed and beheaded by her own father, then after how she managed all these years. Apparently, it seemed that it would be definitely her Aunt, who would have contributed a lot towards her brought up, which couldn't go unnoticed.

“Her name is Shu Shu, my mother's younger sister.

Long Wan'er, still leaning on his arms, while embracing his neck with her hands, finally spoke about her own matter : “Because of the magnetic charm, my mother got attracted towards Long Clan. Afterwards, just because she wanted to be a part of Long Clan, my mother got married to Long Mo'ran and my Aunt to my father's younger cousin. However that war which had taken place twenty years ago, during then not only my mother was bitterly killed by my father, but my father's cousin was also killed in that battle ..... ”

Ye Feng heard her and somewhat understood the whole story, originally her mother and her sister Shu Shu didn't want to marry and get attached to Long Clan, rather they just developed a liking for it and then was forced to do so!

However considering the disposition of Long Mo'ran of now, could he have the so-called love for such a woman? Obviously not, so after the marriage, Long Wan'er's mother went through a huge hardship and also gave birth to her. Perhaps at this time, she might have bumped into Ye Yunfei, since Ye Yunfei had a strange kind of charm, which attracted her mother towards him... ..

And the later matter was quite logical.

And as for Shu Shu, since her sister and her husband, both were killed, she devoted her whole life to look after Long Wan'er, and there was

nothing strange in it. However, the point was she couldn't get away from the cage of Long Clan till now.

“So now, do you have any plan what you have to do next? If you are going to the sea to look for your master, then I'll also tag along with you.”

She said so while being still very tightly squeezed by him into his arms.

“Don't worry.”

Ye Feng, with his both hands, lightly fondled her body as he said : “She vanished from there around half a month ago, until now there is no news. Even if I go to the sea now, it's not necessarily to find her. Actually, I'm not going there to look for her, rather because I have to obtain the Big Coral King first. ”

“What, the big Coral King .....

Her mouth remained a bit open in amazement while a pair of her beautiful eyes also exposed a hint of shock simultaneously.

Now the East China Sea also had the big Coral King, but plenty of martial artists were already there scattered everywhere, including her own Clan! If Ye Feng really wanted to take hold of the big Coral King, that possibility was already at an extremely lower side. In addition, if something went wrong and he didn't succeed in his goal, then he might as well lose his life!

“In order to beat Long Mo'ran soon, I have to obtain this big Coral King at all cost.”

Ye Feng said that with a firm face, then smiled : “But you can rest assured, in any case, I will definitely put my life in the first place. Otherwise, if I lose my life, then can't be with you .....

“What do you want?”

Long Wan'er softly smiled, just now she asked something, but she already knew the answer of it. Right at this moment, she quickly turned over and all of a sudden pressed him under her body as she sat on his waist: “Really very fast you are, your Cultivation already catches up with

me ... ..”

Obviously, she easily felt Ye Feng’s ten years of Cultivation, when a fledgeling boy so quickly grew to her level, it was really sufficient enough to surprise anyone.

“By chance, I obtained a stone in Yanjing .....”

Then Ye Feng described the appearance of that rare heavenly stone bead.

“A heavenly stone bead!”

She heard it and was startled a bit : “Why was it in Yanjing?”

“Why, what’s wrong, what origin does this stuff have?”

Ye Feng’s heart was set in movement and he directly asked one.

“Hmm, a few days ago a rare heavenly stone bead was unearthed in the north-west desert, and now when a huge number of the great martial artist had already gathered around the East China Sea, unfortunately, that heavenly stone bead disappeared for no reason. I hadn’t expected that it would be in Yanjing.”

Although she uttered only a few words, but it was enough for Ye Feng to feel the heat, now he could easily feel that at this time, in the Northwest desert, just because of the disappearance of this heavenly stone bead, how many martial arts people would must have harboured a grudge against this desert? This stone bead was similar to the big Coral King, since it had the feature to promote one’s Cultivation upto five years in a single blow. Naturally, the competition was extremely fierce!

Ye Feng could affirm that the stone bead he had absorbed a few days back was certainly the one from the north-west desert, after all, this kind of thing was definitely rarely seen in the world. So it turned out like this, there must be someone sent by Cai Shaohong to obtain this stone bead, who would have taken advantage of the prevailing disordered situation and succeeded in shipping it back to Yanjing.

The heavenly stone bead suddenly reminded him that it was kept

together with Asura Tactics, those four rare martial arts books, so what would be their origin?

He thought that she might also know about them, therefore once again he asked a question.

“The martial arts technique, Asura Tactics?!”

As soon as she heard that, once again she was taken aback : “The person who had mastered Asura Tactics, had become a bloody good killer. Around thirty years ago, it was destroyed by the martial arts people in a crowd. How can you have their martial arts rare book?

Martial arts technique, Asura Tactics?

It seemed that this Asura Tactics was also one of the popular tactics back then. However now, after listening to Long Wan’er’s words, everything was quite apparent, it had already been exterminated from this world, then how could that place have the rare martial book of this Asura Tactics?

Ye Feng pondered for a while, then he put forward a detailed description of the whole incident related to Cai Shaohong’s case which happened that day, however, it was basically revolving around Lin Shiqing as a whole.

“So that’s how it is.”

After finished listening to the whole incident, an evil smile infected with malicious feelings crawled across her face : “Weren’t you tempted towards that girl, Miss Lin?”

She said so, it wasn’t because she harboured a feeling of jealousy in her heart, rather because when she heard him talking a lot about her, she couldn’t help but think to tease him a bit. It wasn’t easy to see a side of him when he might turn a bit embarrassed and could show his embarrassed-looking face. Hence for her, a little bullying was just fine.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng didn’t have the slightest embarrassment-like performance to display!

“Of course not, the person who can make my heart beat heavily is presently you, Wan’er.”

He then spilt a soft smile as he stretched his hands and squeezed her soft and tender body into his bosom. It was easy to feel her embrace was brimming with intense affection.

“It seems that I haven’t seen you since ages, you missed me, didn’t you?.”

Ye Feng flirtingly said.

“Screw yourself, a dog mouth can never spit out the ivory.”

(Lastvoice : “A dog mouth can never spit out the ivory” – it’s an idiom which means “no good words can be expected from a scoundrel’s mouth.”)

Still being tightly held by him in his bosom she said that as her cheeks slightly turned a bit red.

“Shall we do something shameful now?”

Ye Feng continued saying in a flirty tone.

“You want to, ah, that’s out of the question, you must pass through my consent before that.”

Spontaneously a cute giggle piled up on her pretty face as she said that. Although her mouth said these words, but the fact was a pair of her soft arms had actually already taken initiative and had closely wrapped him up in her arms.

Immediately after, the two bodies slowly and comfortably tumbled down on the bed.

## Chapter 155 - Ye Wentian Sets Out

---

After numerous rounds of war and trying out a number of different moves, the two people comfortably laid on the soft bed. Finally, Long Wan'er was defeated, her tender body softly fell on the bed, without a bit of intention to move anymore. After a long time, the rising wind inside the room finally stopped raining and they finally fell into the lap of rest.

Ye Feng lying on the side, still hugging her soft and smooth skin, really loved this lively and passionate girl.

“Or else just now ...”

He thought in his heart that whether he could really rely on his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring to also make her an Immortal Cultivator? However, he hesitated a bit and didn't begin the process.

It could be anticipated that quite soon the East China Sea would have a series of the reign of terror, therefore at this time, making her become an Immortal Cultivator didn't seem an appropriate decision at all. If by any chance they encountered Long Mo'ran or someone like him, then they would easily notice the change, which would never be a good option.

Literally speaking, the body of Immortal Arteries used to stockpile a plenty of spiritual energy to carry out the Open Hole Process, however, it had an incredibly massive and threatening force, therefore it couldn't be casually carried out anywhere and anytime. He should actually wait for the East China Sea's matter to end, then he should find a quiet place to do it slowly and properly.

At present, Long Wan'er had already softly melted in his arms, completely motionless, resembling an extremely lazy little leopard after eating its fill.

Ye Feng's hands were also still gently caressing her smooth back and feeling the warmth of her body. The fragrance of her body was also



constantly greeting his nose. However, on seeing her beautiful white skin, arrogant front and well-defined buttock, his dishonest little friend once again stood upright.

But he was afraid that she would be unable to withstand, therefore he could only persist in enduring patiently .....

“If this could always be this much good.”

She twisted her body to turn over, then circled her arms around his neck, as her beautiful sparkling eyes like stars, got fixated on him, simultaneously his eyes also penetrated her eyes deeply.

“That day won’t be too far.”

Ye Feng, while still hugging her tightly, thought that if this time he could find his master Su Feiying, then he would immediately follow after her. And when the master would be at his side, then what would be the status of Long Mo’ran in front of her? No matter what the rumours said about Long Clan’s elder that he had a hundred years of Cultivation, still he couldn’t stand any chance against Su Feiying.

In the World of the Immortals, Su Feiying was not only considered as an ultimate beauty, but was also a highly talented Immortal Cultivator, who had already mastered several Immortal Techniques of Star Tomb Tactics on her own. The story didn’t end her, she had also long been aware of the third level. There was almost no one who had the ability to stand against her despite being at the same level as her.

When the two were entangled with each other in a tight embrace, continuously loving each other, then Ye Feng secretly swept his Soul Search Technique and suddenly found that four martial artists went inside a room downstairs, which in return made him a little anxious.

The people of God Fist Gate!

Still holding her in his tight embrace, he started secretly listening to their conversation who were downstairs, by using his Soul Search Technique.

.....

When Ye Feng was getting warm together with Long Wan'er, at the same time, the night of Yanjing was being particularly lively.

In Yanjing, several dignitaries were enjoying together, eating and drinking while gossiping with each other. However, they had one thing in common, and that was their topic of discussion. Their discussion only had Lin Rentian all along, who was the presiding judge of the trial.

The defeated loses!

This phrase was used to describe that Lin Rentian's battle was not an exaggeration.

At this moment, Lin Rentian was in the military district hospital, listening to the doctor in-charge's report. After a number of diagnoses done by the doctor, he eventually came to know that the possibility of his son's recovery was less than 0.1 percent.

This information suddenly changed his facial expression and it turned extremely gloomy. Could it be said that from now onwards his son would remain foolish like this? As a member of Lin Clan, Lin Rentian took it as a huge humiliation.

As per what that girl Xiao Qi had said back then, Lin Xiuwen was under the control of an old man that night and wanted to enter the inner room to force himself on her. However, the corpse of that old man was actually found in artificial lake of the apartment community.

After passing by the repeated diagnosis and various treatments, the reason behind Lin Xiuwen's miserable condition was finally determined. As a result of thorough investigation, it could be said that a drug was involved in this case, which was generally used to stimulate one's desire. However, in his case, his desire couldn't get to give vent to his feelings, and was finally suppressed, which later on led to his this condition.

“Well, Miss Xiao is indeed unable to tell good from bad!”

At this moment, Lin Rentian's heart was raging with fury, wearing a very gloomy facial expression on his spectacled face he said : “If Xiuwen doesn't get cured, then over the time, we will go to Xiao Clan with a

marriage proposal, making that little girl Xiao Qi obediently become Lin's daughter – in – law!

Since he badly failed to retaliate on Ye Feng and Su Menghan in the court, he really needed he let his anger out, therefore he vented his spleen at Xiao Qi. If this girl Xiao Qi hadn't let his son on, then his son wouldn't have turned into an idiot, right? So, let her bear the consequences of it.

In his opinion, if his son had developed a liking for anyone, or he wanted someone, that was considered as an honour for the other side. However, this Xiao Clan's girl actually didn't appreciate the kindness rendered by him, leading his son to turn into an idiot, therefore she should make compensation for that!

This kind of robbers' theory, it seemed that it was actually considered as quite natural, inevitable and right in the dictionary of Lin Rentian.

While on the other side, at this time, Xiao Qi together with Lin Shiqing, was occupied with her own world. They were constantly accessing the Internet as if trying to look for someone, frequently making telephone calls, checking data and so on. There was no mistake, indeed they were actually trying to find some information related to Ye Feng.

It was almost afternoon when Lin Shiqing suddenly discovered something.

“Could it be that Ye Feng is Mo Jiuge and Mo Jiuge is Ye Feng?”

Her eyebrows tightly wrinkled up as she was constantly pondering about this possibility that if what she had just guessed was true, then that explained everything, didn't it mean that her best friend had actually developed a liking for Ye Feng, who was her fiance?

No, this is absolutely impossible.

The truth was, although Lin Shiqing had never regarded Ye Feng as her fiance, but now literary speaking, Xiao Qi fancied him very much, which was not an important issue, but still why Lin Shiqing's heart had a contradiction for this, even she also didn't know about it.

Suddenly a train of thoughts hit her mind and reminded her of that day when she was trapped in the explosion which happened a few days back in that abandoned factory , where she was heavily pressed under his body on the scene. During then, she was really deeply touched.

If the masked man was really Ye Feng, which meant that ugly-looking appearance was also a false one. In this case, the marriage her Grandfather had arranged for her, it wasn't like it couldn't be accepted ever .....

While sailing through her thought process, suddenly Lin Shiqing's beautiful face was taken over by a bright red colour and soon a cute blush took birth on her face.

“Hope that they aren't the same person.”

She sighed slightly, shook her head and looked at the side where high-spirited Xiao Qi was. This girl, it seemed that she wanted to go through the materials of the National Security Agency whole night, to identify the identity of Mo Jiuge.

Xiao Qi was the only witness and litigant of Cai Shaohong's case presently, so naturally, she had all the right to examine the jurisdictions of these materials freely.

“I'll surely find who you are.”

Xiao Qi's heart was all firm!

In Qingfeng Park.

Unknowingly slept in the afternoon, Ye Wentian finally woke up, as he casually turned around. Immediately he raised his head to look outside and quickly noticed that it was already night and the moon had also already climbed up high on the tip of the branch. This scene all of a sudden alarmed him for a while.

So this was how he was, actually had fallen asleep?

“Grandpa, are you hungry? Have supper.”

Su Menghan had already cooked several side dishes beforehand. Seeing

him finally awake, she started placing them on the table as she said beamingly.

“You – where did that little brat go?”

Ye Wentian asked rightaway.

“He .....

Su Menghan hesitated a bit, she didn't want to tell this thing to Ye Wentian, but at the same time, didn't want to deceive him as well. For a while, she couldn't understand what she should say in this situation.

“Did he go to the East China Sea? Little brat!”

Ye Wentian suddenly got up!

“Grandpa don't be anxious ah, he really has something important to take care of, he has to find his master ... ..”

Su Menghan promptly took Ye Feng's side and explained everything.

“Do you know how dangerous the East China Sea is now?”

Ye Wentian, holding a firm expression like iron, said: “You are also helping him, don't you fear that your husband might not come back ever?”

As soon as she heard these words, her face flushed and she haltingly said : “No ... .. not at all, he is so ferocious ... ..”

“Ferocious, nonsense!”

He angrily continued : “You just call someone from that Heavenly Serpent Gang and ask him to drive and deliver us. Now run – wait, forget about it, after dinner, we'll think about it.

“Oh!”

Su Menghan nodded her head!

Actually, at this moment, she was laughing secretly in her heart, because Ye Feng had already instructed her that when the time came, she would have to make a trusted person of Scar drive Hummer to send him to his desired place. And as for Hummer's fuel, travelling all the way

from Yanjing to southern direction, they would have to stop from time to time to get it filled, which would definitely delay a lot of time ... ..

“Oh, that’s right, you can also come along with me, or else stay here in the fear of having danger.”

In the process of eating, Ye Wentian said that without leaving any room to refuse.

Su Menghan heard that, and immediately her heart was hit by a feeling of surging warmth. It seemed that grandfather really used to consider her as his own people, didn’t he?

## Chapter 156 - Luo Feng, Nan Feng!

---

Ye Wentian wanted to go to the East China Sea, not only to look for Ye Feng, but he had also another goal as well. Actually, he also wanted to inquire about the situation and see who in the end wanted to encroach on Ye Clan's rare books of martial arts.

Before, he had already carried out a proper interrogation of the thief Ye Feng had caught a few days back, however the thief actually didn't know anything. He had just picked up the list issued by the martial arts world. Therefore, Ye Wentian waved his hand to make him leave his villa soon.

In order to be safe, he took the four rare books of martial arts, Flying Core Technique, Dragon Claw Hand Technique, Crazy Devil Boxing Technique and Electric Black Sword Technique, along with him, and then together with Su Menghan, he boarded on Hummer H2.

At the time of boarding, he thought that this car was pretty imposing, however, he certainly didn't know that the fuel consumption of this car was also enormously high even though there was a backup fuel tank. In order to reach Xiangshan County, more than 1500 kilometres was needed to cover, so it was estimated that it must take a whole day and night of time to reach there.

All along Su Menghan was indirectly helping Ye Feng in deliberately delaying the time .....

.....

While at this moment, Ye Feng, who had been in the East China Sea, was currently eavesdropping the conversation of those four martial artists who were downstairs.

“Brother Luo Feng, are you all right?”

This was actually said by a youth who relatively had a lower level of Cultivation.

“Of course, no problem at all.”

Another youth, probably 27-28-year-old, said in a lower voice just like a brave tiger waiting for the appropriate opportunity to act. Ye Feng could clearly feel that this young man's Cultivation was the highest among the four people present there, actually, he had 25 years of Cultivation!

Apparently, he was just like the other person, “Brother Luo Feng”.

“That boy Nanfang, he actually dared to sneak attack on us.”

Brother Luo Feng said faintly : “It can be said that he was lucky this time, however, the next time we bump into each other, my Paochui Fist will inevitably make him die, leaving behind his intact corpse!”

Nanfang?

Ye Feng heard his name and immediately his eyebrows slightly wrinkled, the name ‘Nanfang’ which was mentioned by them, could it be that he was that Skeleton Masked man from before?

“He he he, indeed, who doesn't know that Brother Luo Feng's Paochui Fist has just recently reached its second layer, making him able to easily assign away his inner qi from his body, isn't he incomparably domineering now?

Immediately rest of the men started thinking highly of Brother Luo Feng. Even across a layer of the strong sound insulated floor, the sound could be very clearly heard by Ye Feng, this was the so-called extraordinary and wondrous use of his Soul Search Technique.

Ye Feng listened to their conversation and soon knitted his eyebrows to make a grand frown.

“Wan'er, do you know who Luo Feng is?”

While hugging her closely, he quietly asked.

“Which Luo Feng?”

She asked lazily.



“The one from God Fist Gate.”

He replied.

“God Fist Gate’s Luo Feng?”

Long Wan’er heard this name and was left flabbergasted for a while, still leaning on his body, she moved a bit more closer to his arms : “He is the leader of God Fist Gate’s younger generation, I heard that he was formerly called Nanfang, who had been brought back from the secular world to start practising Cultivation ... ..”

Luo Feng, Nan Feng, so that was how it was!

Ye Feng suddenly realized something.

It seemed that these people should be doubtlessly the people of Southern Heavenly Gate and as for the other enemy Nanfang had, regarding which he had mentioned earlier in front of Ye Feng, he should be this guy Luo Feng, shouldn’t he? Unfortunately, Lu Feng had not only achieved 25 years of Cultivation, but had also reached the second layer of Paochui Fist. To deal with such a great martial artist like him, Nanfang didn’t have the slightest bit of stratagem which could ensure his success. Moreover, he hadn’t been caught by now, that was entirely because of his favourable luck.

Ye Feng, even more, wanted to give a phone call to Nanfang rightaway. However it seemed that currently, he had to be a bit extra cautious, in case the other situation took a critical turn, then he would surely repent on calling him at this odd time. Wouldn’t it be like to have one misfortune after another for him then?

Or actually he should wait for tomorrow to make him a call, in any case having Long Wan’er at his side, Ye Feng wasn’t a bit anxious to draw out any information from Nanfang.

“Let’s go to the southern seacoast first early morning tomorrow, there should have a Linhai cliff.

Ye Feng moved closer to her ears and said softly in a lower voice.

“What are you going to do there?”

She wrapped her arms around his neck and softly kissed his face, then asked somewhat curiously.

“The lost technique of Hidden Immortal School, Crying Ghost Blade Technique’s rare book should be hidden there somewhere on that cliff’s top.”

Ye Feng explained things to her that previously Zhu Bainiao had drawn a map to him. Now that he recalled it, he realized that actually, the location of that drawn map was somewhere in the vicinity of this place. Must say, this was indeed a great coincidence! Now he didn’t need to deliberately go to look for that place.

Now Ye Feng could never look down upon the place of martial arts, because he had merely used one technique of martial arts, that was Dragon Claw Hand technique, which had a remarkably high value. Just because of it, he got the power to assign his Zhenqi from his body and catch people or grab things spatially. At least in Ye Feng’s cognition, he hadn’t seen any Immortal Technique with this kind of terrific effect till now. Now he felt that knowledge and experience of some other martial arts techniques might prove very advantageous for his future practice.

“Crying Ghost Blade Technique!”

Long Wan’er heard that and was suddenly taken aback and her heart also skipped a beat: “How do you know that?”

“Do you know Zhu Bainiao?”

“Ye Feng asked.

“Ah, prior to the news of the Changbai Mountains’ Telepathic Grass, wasn’t this person send out?”

This made clear that she had already heard this name ‘Zhu Bainiao’ before.

Ye Feng put Zhu Bainiao’s matter briefly, then inquired : “What is so special about this Crying Ghost Blade Technique?

“Hmm.”

She solemnly said: “Formerly, there was a Hidden Immortal School, which was one of the three big influences of the martial arts world, just by totally depending on its master technique – Crying Ghost Blade Technique! But thirty years ago, it was heard that this technique had been lost, afterwards that Hidden Immortal School also gradually deteriorated over the time .....

“So it was this much formidable?”

This time it was Ye Feng’s turn to be all shocked.

Originally he thought that Crying Ghost Blade Technique was just an ordinary martial arts technique of the hidden immortal School. However, it seemed that he was totally mistaken. Once the Hidden Immortal School lost this technique, it moved towards the path of its deterioration gradually , that was how formidable this technique was!

“However we gained in a big way.”

Ye Feng notoriously smiled as he pinched her pretty and upright chest gently, so as to stir up her anger and make her pout playfully.

“Even if you learn it, still don’t dare use it.”

While acting coquettishly, she continued : “If you let the people of Hidden Immortal Faction see you using it, then certainly they will chase you down to the ends of the earth and will kill you.”

“If we take hold of it, still won’t be able to use it freely, then it would be better to sell it to anyone, and I don’t believe we wouldn’t have anyone who would like to buy it.”

Ye Feng wasn’t a bit worried about being killed, and the fact was, weren’t there very few people who wanted to kill him? There was only Long Mo’ran who was enough to deal with, while there were several Hidden Immortal Schools, but still, they couldn’t stand any chance against Ye Feng.

“If you sell it to the Hidden Immortal School, you might receive at least

several billion for it.”

Long Wan'er giggled loudly: “Genuinely speaking, this way we don't have any shortage of money to spend throughout our life.”

“Indeed.”

Ye Feng smiled mischievously, whether it was the modern city or the World of the Immortals, money was always considered as an indispensable thing. Making their women spend money endlessly, this should be considered as the dream of most of the men in this world as well.

The whole night, the two of them rolled over and over again, until late night, then they finally fell asleep while holding each other in a cozy embrace.

The next day, Ye Feng woke up early in the morning and felt that the little girl was still in his arms, holding an appearance of a drowsy look, which was appearing extremely cute and lovable.

Ye Feng was a little soft-hearted, he wanted to make her sleep a little more, but right at this time, suddenly someone knocked at the door.

“Wan'er, you haven't woken up yet?”

A mature gentle and soft voice spread into their ears, who were still lying under the blanket.

“Oh, Aunt.”

In a split second, Long Wan'er woke up, suddenly sat up and lifted her quilt!

Ye Feng subconsciously looked towards her and all of a sudden his line of sight refused to listen to his order and move, he was fixedly staring at the soft and tight chest of Long Wan'er, where a pair of her snow white, huge and straight balls were, which were sufficient enough to be called as a big killing device for any man !

“What are you seeing, haven't you had played enough last night?”

She groaned softly, surprisingly she wasn't being bashful a bit, they

had been so intimate last night, so why would she feel shy?

She flew her leg and threw a kick directly towards Ye Feng, making him fall down the bed.

Ye Feng smartly got up to escape, thought: played enough? Absolutely hadn't played enough! The so-called play could never be enough during a lifetime!

Since someone was knocking at the door, he didn't have much time to crack a joke, therefore soon they got up and started wearing their clothes.

Long Wan'er, while combing her hair in front of the mirror, turned around and said: "You go to open the door, Aunt is outside ..... Remember to put on a mask, besides, she is a very nice person, so rest assured, she won't embarrass you.

Ye Feng squinted his eyes to look and saw two masks had already been kept ready in advance, one was white while the other one was black. Immediately a wry smile spread on his face as he thought that this little girl was indeed quite thoughtful.

## Chapter 157 - She Is Called Xiao Yue

---

Ye Feng, wearing a black face mask, stepped forward to open the door.

Standing outside, her Aunt Shu Shu immediately entered his line of sight. Actually, with the help of Soul Search Technique, he could even imagine the facial contours of the opposite party pretty easily.

She had a very attractive physique and was herself a charming, beautiful and young married woman. Her hair was tied up in a bun, while her beautiful eyes had a gleaming reflection of waves in sunlight, very docile and gentle, which could easily make anyone looking at them, have the feeling of warmth.

According to what Long Wan'er had said about her Aunt Shu Shu earlier, when she was forced on Long Clan, she was only sixteen years old. Now twenty years had passed by, but her body and skin, everything was maintained very well and didn't have any effective change because of growing age.

Indeed, she was a beauty!

Ye Feng couldn't help but acclaim, no wonder why Long Clan had grabbed Shu Shu and her sister back then. On looking at the present Long Wan'er, he could now imagine what kind of style Shu Shu and her sister would have back then. However now, Shu Shu had a special charm that Long Wan'er didn't, not even the slightest bit.

That charm was totally different from this young girl. A matured appearance accompanied with a plentiful stature, still, she completely didn't have the slightest bit of shyness that a young girl usually had.

Ye Feng's eyes barely fell on her for the first time and suddenly he realized something out of the blue, no wonder why nowadays in the city, people were fond of this kind of young married woman.

“Mo Jiuge?”

Shu Shu opened her mouth and lightly seasoned, accompanied with a supple smile, while her beautiful eyes were gazing at Ye Feng gracefully, which somewhat aroused his curiosity a bit more.

“Yes, it’s me.”

Ye Feng smiled: “Aunt, it’s our first time meeting each other.”

“Good, no need to be formal.”

Shu Shu smiled as she waved her hand, making him feel like bathing in a spring breeze: “I have heard Wan’er saying many times that your Cultivation skill is pretty good, but in my eyes talent is totally unimportant, what important is you must not turn your back on her ever, do you know that?”

“Well, I won’t.”

Ye Feng turned his head and looked at Long Wan’er, who was still dressing and applying makeup on her eyes with a gentle touch.

She was his own woman, in any case, he couldn’t abandon her!

“Wan’er believes you, so Aunt will also believe you.”

Shu Shu smiled and lightly sipped her lower lip: “First let’s do it like this, hope it won’t bother you. I have heard the big Coral King is going to mature tonight, when you go out, don’t think about going towards the southern seacoast, besides must be careful at all times.

“Hmm.”

Although Ye Feng nodded, but his heart actually had a sense of disapproval, because his first goal behind this trip was to grab the big Coral King, then how couldn’t he go? However just for Shu Shu’s honour and care, naturally he couldn’t let her words pass his ear like a wind, therefore his action must not be careless!

Shu Shu didn’t have Cultivation skill, she was just an ordinary human being.

Relying on the knowledge of Soul Search Technique, Ye Feng perceived something, it seemed that Long Clan was stingy, since it didn’t teach the

core technique of martial arts to Shu Shu. Conceivably in Long Clan, how bitter Shu Shu's life would be?

She couldn't leave Long Clan so far, might be because it wasn't actually approved by Long Clan. In her entire lifetime, there was only one person and that was Long Wan'er, who she had at her side to look after.

"Long Clan."

Ye Feng then looked at the beautiful and attractive back of Shu Shu, as she turned back to return to her own room. Now he had a feeling of disgust in his heart for their Clan. As per his view, such an ugly place it was, no wonder why Wan'er didn't want to stay together with her Clan.

"Well, let's go."

Soon Long Wan'er also finished dressing and conveniently put on another white face mask on her face, matching with Ye Feng's black mask. This pair of masks had been specially prepared before she came here, this proved that her thoughts were really exquisite.

She jumped and quickly arrived at the door and then she intimately clung onto Ye Feng's arm. Since she met with him again after a while, therefore she had let herself enjoy every moment of their precious time till her heart content.

He smiled and slipped his arm around her shoulder and they finally went out the door to go to their planned location. The big Coral King was in the southern seacoast and coincidentally Crying Ghost Blade Technique was also hidden somewhere similarly in the southern seacoast. But there was a pinch, the distance between the two places was quite afar, still, hope this trip might turn out the best one for them.

While departing, he swept his Soul Search Technique a bit and sensed that downstairs, the people of God Fist Gate were not in their room, also he didn't know where they would have gone this early in the morning.

Long Wan'er took the elevator down the stairs, soon the masks of these two people really attracted the attention of the elevator. However Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were not the average people, naturally, they



didn't mind their gazes.

Ye Feng took out his cell phone, since he wanted to make a phone call to Nanfang to ask what the situation outside there. But at this time, the elevator's doors opened up and two people appeared right before their eyes standing in the hotel's lobby, where one person was known to them!

Wasn't this woman that red beauty from before, who had that Audi – TTS Roadster?

Ye Feng felt strange seeing this beauty here, could it be that she had been following him all the way by checking the license plate number and finally caught up with him here? However at this time, the centre of attraction of everyone was shifted towards a very young guy, standing beside the red beauty, having a stylish hair, wearing white shirt and coat with black vest, while there was a piece of dog-shaped ancient jade hanging around his neck, making people seeing this guy think that he certainly was something.

“Xiao Yue, I have been inquiring for so long, let's get room to take rest first.”

A dog-shaped ancient jade of the youth was hanging at one side when he said, while trying to reach out his hands and hug the red beauty.

“Wang Shaodong, I have arrived here just to find someone, I don't have any leisure time to spend with you rightnow.”

At this moment her eyes were revealing a hint of disgust, however, while still remaining all calm and collected, she quietly tried to stay away from his reaching hands towards her slender waistline.

“It's not exactly finding a person, you have me Wang Shaodong, still you think looking for that person would be very difficult for us?

That youth's eyes were greedily stuck at the fuller chest of the red beauty, however somewhat disappointedly he took his hands back : “But Xiao Yue, did you have a big enmity with that guy called Ye Feng? Didn't that BMW's driver already pay for your damages?

“You won't understand.”

The beauty in the red said impatiently, then she rushed to the hotel's front desk and immediately started inquiring something.

Ye Feng clearly heard what she asked, and as expected there was no one called Ye Feng staying here in this hotel.

“Originally she is called Xiao Yue, but how can she know my name? Does she have any relationship with Yanjing's Xiao Qi?”

Ye Feng felt a little strange.

Logically speaking, it seemed that they had already checked the BMW car's owner, then, in that case, they could only find Scar, not more than that. On listening to their conversation, it appeared that they not only had found Scar, but had also received compensation for their damages. But then the point was, why was she still looking for Ye Feng?

It was completely impossible that Scar would provide any information concerned with Ye Feng, then there was only one possibility left, Xiao Yue really had some kind of relationship with Yanjing's Xiao Qi!

Were they from the same clan?

Whether or not, Ye Feng would certainly not jump out to admit it, hence he didn't want to pay attention to them. Hugging Long Wan'er, he just wanted to leave the hotel.

“Hey, wait you two, stop right there!”

However at this moment, that youth with a dog-shaped ancient jade, actually noticed them wearing the masks and hurriedly pointed his finger at them while staring : “You people in the masks, just take it off! ”

He looked at Ye Feng while holding a look of suspicion in his eyes! Then he shifted his gaze towards Long Wan'er and stared her as if examining her from head to toe, his eyes were revealing a strong desire to possess her. It was quite obvious that her alluring figure would have certainly aroused his interest.

His statement also caught the attention of several people present in the hotel's lobby. Consequently, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er also stopped their

footsteps.

However, when Ye Feng noticed the look that youth had in his eyes right now, he immediately snorted coldly.

Although he didn't know who this guy was, but he dared to look at Long Wan'er with such frivolous and disrespectful eyes, how could Ye Feng walk away ignoring it?

“Keep respect in your eyes.”

Ye Feng snorted coldly, then stepped forward and threw a kick towards him, “bang” soon that guy Wang Shaodong was kicked to the ground, Immediately after, Ye Feng caught up with him and placed his foot on his chest, right in the centre of that dog-shaped ancient jade!

“Someone was hit! Someone was hit!”

“Quickly press the alarm!”

No one present in that hotel's lobby had expected that the man in the mask would actually hit a human, therefore everything turned so chaotic all of a sudden.

“Hey you, stop right there!”

By this time, the beauty in the red, who was busy inquiring at the front desk, also recovered and quickly ran over to prevent Ye Feng hastily.

When she was running, her beautiful fuller chest was rhythmically moving up and down like a mountain range, making the peripheral man unable to bear but swallow his saliva.....

## Chapter 158 - Coastal Cliff

---

In the hotel lobby, Ye Feng placed his foot on the chest of that rampant youth and coldly said: “We have worn masks or not, that has nothing to do with you, don’t just go asking for trouble.

Since his foot wasn’t so heavy, therefore that youth called Wang Shaodong didn’t have any major injury. However he was trampled upon all of a sudden in front of so many people, that stood really humiliating for him.

“You stop right there!”

Suddenly at this time, clad in a red dress, that beautiful woman quickly ran over and arrived in front of Ye Feng. Her charming face was infected with a touch of concern. Besides, a burst of light and subtle fragrance, fluttering from her body, smoothly rushed towards Ye Feng’s nose.

“Remember, there are a lot of people in this world, you should never dare provoke them.”

While stepping on Wang Shaodong’s chest and crushing him under his foot, Ye Feng said that, then his intense gaze swept over the matured and attractive looking Xiao Yue, as he took away his foot and turned around to leave : “Goodbye.”

“Wait, do you know the person you hit just now is who?”

Xiao Yue shouted out loud.

She was fixedly staring at Ye Feng’s rear view while thinking more and more like: As per what Xiao Qi had said before, a guy wearing a face mask was called Mo Jiuge, although he didn’t have the same height or body structure, but still wearing a mask?

“I don’t know, neither I want to know.”

Ye Feng returned to the side where Long Wan’er was, then he

conveniently wrapped his arm around her shoulders and stepped forward to leave the hotel at once.

“Are you not Mo Jiuge!”

Xiao Yue again shouted loudly.

However, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er didn't give her any response and left the hotel's entrance very hastily, without leaving any trace, as if they totally disappeared.

Xiao Yue was all helpless, suddenly they disappeared in front of her, making her very agitated and in anger, she stomped her feet bitterly. It was said that Ye Feng and Mo Jiuge had some relationship. Since Ye Feng was in Xiangshan County at present, then naturally Mo Jiuge would also be here.

However now, she couldn't pursue him to ask everything and understand the whole situation, because –

“Xiao Yue, help me, support me quickly with your hand.”

After being crushed by Ye Feng under his foot just now, Wang Shaodong felt like his whole body had dispersed into several pieces, he was even totally unable to get up. However Xiao Yue was at his side, whom he could call and make her help him, meanwhile, he could also take the opportunity to be a bit naughty with her ... ..

“Wait for the ambulance.”

However, instead of giving him support, she snappily said the sentence, then ran to the side to dial 120 and call the ambulance.

Wang Shaodong was the son of a wealthy entrepreneur in Shanghai. Before, Xiao Yue had taken his help to inquire about the whereabouts of silver BMW, so that she could personally pursue it. However now, Wang Shaodong clung to her and was totally unwilling to part with her.

As for Wang Shaodong's thoughts, how couldn't Xiao Yue understand them? They were nothing but just his intense desire to play with her till his heart content. However, unfortunately, she was not that kind of

young female student who could be easy to cheat on, how smartly she didn't let him have his way.

She raised her head, her beautiful eyes swept around the hotel, as if she was recalling the scene which had happened just now.

Last night at the time of her car repair, she gave a call to her younger sister Xiao Qi and asked her about the recent situation. On listening to her tone, it sounded like she very much liked that masked guy who was called Mo Jiuge.

During that phone call, Xiao Yue also mentioned about how her car was hit by the silver BMW car, which somewhat aroused Xiao Qi's interest and in return she said that originally that silver BMW was the property of Yanjing's Heavenly Serpent Gang, but presently Heavenly Serpent Gang not only belonged to a High school student called Ye Feng, but was also under his direct control!

In addition, Xiao Qi also added that she had a favourable impression that the masked man, Mo Jiuge and Ye Feng had something to do with each other .....

Xiao Yue thought and felt that something was not appropriate, just from seeing the current situation, it could be said that the masked man obviously had another woman, therefore she could never let her younger sister fall into his evil clutches!

Hmm, must be prevented!

She then turned head and looked at Wang Shaodong while thinking that Mo Jiuge was also very rampant, without knowing the others' background, he dared to hit him randomly. If this were looked up by Wang Shaodong's family member, wouldn't they certainly put him to death?

She gracefully stood aside while crossing her hands around her chest, as if embracing it. Her red skirt sketching out her attractive figure had already caught the attention of countless eyes.

However, by this time, Wang Shaodong had already pulled out his cell

phone and had also begun to contact Shanghai city's pack of rogues, making them send people to Xiangshan County to provide assistance. Even if the County was turned upside down, still he would surely do everything to find that masked man and then severely humiliate him!

.....

At this time, on the other side, Ye Feng along with Long Wan'er rushed all the way to the south, soon they left the centre of the bustling area and had advanced towards the seashore cliff where the rare book of Crying Ghost Blade Technique was hidden.

Half an hour later, when they were not very far away from the destination, right then, Ye Feng thought something and took his cell phone out, then pressed a number by extracting it from his memory and made a phone call to Nanfang.

Du – the first call wasn't answered by anyone.

Beep – beep –

However, after several consecutive sounds, the opposite party finally picked up the phone and suddenly a huge noise around the opposite party was transmitted to Ye Feng's ears.

“Nanfang, you have now no way out, obediently embrace your death!

“Smelly brat, stop right there!”

Surprisingly it turned out to be the voice of God Fist Gate's Luo Feng and his three fellows! The howling sound of the strong wind, accompanied with the sound of ocean waves whipping the cliff, making it seemed that the situation in the southern coastal region wasn't good rightnow.

“Where are you?”

Without further ado, Ye Feng straightforwardly asked.

“The southern coastal cliff, there is one big vividly rooted tree nearby.

The panting sound of Nanfang passed through the phone, Ye Feng could clear hear him running at an extremely high speed, however

surprisingly his tone still hadn't lost its calm! Moreover, he didn't ask Ye Feng where he was at present, apparently, Ye Feng was the one who gave him a call, then certainly he ought to be in the East China Sea.

“I'll be there rightaway.”

Ye Feng's heart felt a cold shiver, there was a large tree in this vicinity, wasn't that the same marked place that Zhu Bainiao had drawn on the map?

Presently, Nanfang went into hiding somewhere in the vicinity of that rare book!

“No, you are not Luo Feng's opponent!”

Nanfang immediately declined him : “I will jump into the sea, if I'll be lucky, then I might survive, if couldn't ..... you find a time to come here to take hold of the badge of our South family and bring it back to Yanjing... ..”

(Lastvoice : Here South family means Southern Heavenly Gate.)

“Nonsense, wait for me.”

Ye Feng cursed him loudly and immediately hung up the phone.

The honorific badge of his gang, Southern Heavenly Gate, could it help him in taking care of his damn things? By no means, he would think about taking care of it. Besides, wasn't one of them had twenty-five years of Cultivation? However, he had even pursued Zhui Hun the armed escort, who had thirty years of Cultivation and had also finished his chapter by killing him!

Wearing masks, Ye Feng together with Long Wan'er, quickly rushed towards the southern direction.

Soon, cold and refreshing but somewhat fierce sea breeze started blowing right against their faces, which made Ye Feng immediately understand that the coast was not very far away from there. Since they were advancing directly towards the direction of the coastal cliff, that big vividly rooted tree had already appeared in the line of their sight.



“Do you want to fight with God Fist Gate?”

Long Wan'er, although didn't know what just happened on the phone call, still she asked quickly to understand what she had to do now.

“Yes!”

Ye Feng nodded.

In the front cliff, gradually the shadows of five people appeared in their field of vision, as expected, it really was Nanfang, who was being cornered by God Fist Gate's four fellow apprentices to the cliff. Under the sheer precipice, raging waves striking the shore were looking very terrific, under the violent sea breeze, the wild tide looked like a huge monster devouring people. If an ordinary person jumped down, he wouldn't have any way out!

“Good luck .....

Ye Feng had no other choice but to sigh with sorrow, the direction that youth Nanfang had chosen to run away was right, otherwise, even if Ye Feng wanted to rescue the opposite party, he couldn't have caught up with him.

“You hold up the weaker one, I assassinate the big one.”

Ye Feng said that and immediately his stature quietly faded away!

Long Wan'er, who was running together with his side by side, when saw him suddenly disappearing right in front of her eyes, it gave her a scare and she couldn't help but was taken aback, what flagitious ability this was, invisibility? But she couldn't even think about it for a second and suddenly her stature was already discovered by the front four people of God Fist Gate.

Seeing that, she clenched her teeth and chose to believe Ye Feng. Then quickly she walked half step and shouted one, Gentle Palm Technique! Lining clouds, overturning sea, capsizing earth and rocking the heaven, these were the four styles Long Clan's Gentle Palm Technique had, which were a set of specialized moves and were used to fight with several martial artists at the same time.

They saw her waving her hands and suddenly the next moment, her pretty and delicate stature fled and appeared in front of them, not only that, she had already thrown her palm towards those four men, a sudden rattling palm of wind!

If Ye Feng abandoned her right now, not only she would be definitely captured, but would also get killed by them, this would be the final outcome because the bilateral disparity was too big!

This sudden act made the handsome youth, Nanfang, who had already retreated on top of the cliff, all blind with the bright charm, what kind of situation this was, suddenly a woman showed up to kill his enemy, was she helping him deal with the people of God Fist Boxing?

This was illogical!

## Chapter 159 - Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation!

---

Gentle Palm Technique was considered as Long Clan's one of the most exquisite three sets of martial arts techniques because this technique had some beautiful and wondrous moves, which made its user capable of defeating a huge force alone quite easily.

However if it was Long Mo'ran who had used this technique just now, then he just needed a single move, which would have been sufficient enough to make Luo Feng along with his three fellow apprentices fly to the dregs. It was quite natural that Long Wan'er couldn't reach this level so early.

Although she was a very talented girl, but still she couldn't comprehend the second layer of this technique. After all, she was still young and had merely 10 years of Cultivation. In case Luo Feng and the other God Fist Gate's disciples besieged her, certainly, she couldn't withstand them.

However Luo Feng, who had twenty-five years of Cultivation and had already comprehended the second layer of Paochui Boxing, naturally his talent was remarkably high! At present, he was just 27-28 years old, but had already made his position among his peers in this martial arts world and had stood in the pinnacle of his character.

And as for his three young fellow apprentices, they were not so highly talented like him and naturally they didn't have too many practice resources. Presently they were 27-28 years old and had only achieved ten years of preliminary Cultivation skill, but their individual fighting strength wasn't as good as Long Wan'er.

However, the three together were more than enough to capture Long Wan'er alive.

Ye Feng would certainly not let this thing happen.

The moment he transformed into the invisible form, he saw Long Wan'er rushed towards those four people, displaying Gentle Palm Technique to attract their attention. Right at this moment, Ye Feng quietly arrived behind Luo Feng's back, instantly his Zhenqi started condensing crazily and the next moment, a golden sword from his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring flashed out in his hand, with surging strength.

Immediately after, the golden sword light flashed and directly jabbed into Luo Feng's chest!

One shot succeeded!

Poof!

The fresh blood splashed out, however, it somewhat startled Ye Feng, at such a crucial moment, this man Luo Feng had actually averted from the vital part heart, and as a result, the sword only pierced his shoulder.

"Who is sneak attacking!"

Luo Feng bellowed, then trod a step and suddenly turned around accompanied with his two fists!

The appearance of that guy was somewhat similar to Nanfang, however, his face had a hint of an intense insolent expression. Now that he was unexpectedly stabbed by Ye Feng's sword, he was in a little pain, which also affected his facial muscles and they had started slightly trembling.

Paochui Boxing!

"God Fist Gate," these three words were not as pure as it sounded like, just on the basis of his Boxing Technique, Ye Feng had clearly understood by now that in case he was smashed by those fists, even he couldn't do anything, except harbouring a grudge against him on the spot.

Indeed as expected, Luo Feng was an incredibly talented man, since he had the ability to comprehend the second layer of the martial arts technique, obviously, his intuition of danger would have been certainly

stronger than any other ordinary warrior. As for the armed escort, Zhui Hun, although he had thirty years Cultivation, but still he couldn't sense Ye Feng's sneak attack. However surprisingly, Luo Feng actually evaded his sword which had the might to kill him then and there.

This was the first time for Ye Feng encountering such a formidable life and death fight!

"This man Luo Feng, I don't think that I can be a suitable match for him!"

Ye Feng's mind was fully alert, he quickly receded few steps back.

"Can you really run away?"

Luo Feng's corners of the mouth suddenly curled up, he roared loudly and pounded his both fists finally in the midair, immediately followed by two invisible fists, which a naked eye couldn't see!

However Ye Feng relying on his Soul Search Technique, quickly sensed that there were two strong fists, holding destructive power, were rapidly approaching him. So now it turned out like this, Luo Feng could also assign his inner qi away from his body surprisingly!

If Ye Feng had been an ordinary warrior with a decade of Cultivation, then these two fists would have been enough to kill him on the spot, but was Ye Feng an average person?

"Dragon Claw Hand Technique!"

He gloomily shouted one, instantaneously his both hands turned into claws and all of a sudden his Zhenqi sprang out from his body and grabbed the opposite party's approaching two destructive fists.

"Bang" a loud noise reverberated, produced by a massive collision of inner qi and Zhenqi in the air, the violent hit erupted a circle of invisible airwaves. While at this time, on the other side, Nanfang, who was being protected by Ye Feng all along, was already too late to show any reaction, his clothes swirled in the air and the whole person was almost lifted and thrown down the cliff.

Shua! Shua!

Two powerful fists, with a terrifying speed and catastrophic might, were advancing towards Ye Feng as if they were going to completely engulf him. After all, Luo Feng had twenty-five years of Cultivation, which was obviously higher than Ye Feng,

Bagua Boxing!

On seeing the might of his two fists, Ye Feng couldn't dare to be negligent, similarly, he also waved his both fists at once.

Bang! Bang!

In a split second, the vigour of Luo Feng's two fists was totally nullified by Ye Feng's fists.

Ye Feng stood still, the pressure of the airwave caused by that terrific collision suddenly blew his hair. He then raised his head and firmly gazed at the opposite party, Luo Feng.

He didn't know that Luo Feng could also assign his inner qi away from his body, or else he would have been vigilant enough in advance to dodge it if needed. However, if Ye Feng had dodged Luo Feng's blow, then Nanfang, who was still standing on the edge of the cliff, would have been finished by now.

Keep aside what others said, but the fact was Ye Feng still appreciated Nanfang.

In this world, everyone wants to have enough strength to protect their loved one around and in order to achieve that, they need to set up their own forces, because only having the individual power alone is absolutely useless.

However, in order to set up own forces, what is most important?

Certainly, it's the talented person!

"Mo brother."

Nanfang shouted one while still standing on the edge of the cliff, suddenly his black shirt was lifted to fly, the strong airwave, filled with

flying pebbles and sand, was almost making him unable to open his eyes, but he still had the confidence that in this critical moment, Ye Feng would certainly come to rescue him.

Surprisingly right at this time, Ye Feng also launched a move equally powerful as Luo Feng's, how stronger he was after all?

Even if he knew Ye Feng and Mo Jiuge were the same guy, it was still impossible for him to call out his name in public, naturally, he used "Mo brother" to call him.

"Today, I'll help you in taking revenge."

Although neither Ye Feng knew nor he had ever asked Nanfang about the past events which would have happened between him and Luo Feng, but seeing Luo Feng chasing after him to track him down, he immediately understood that the two were definitely totally irreconcilable.

The golden sword which he had in his hand, he flung it away, accompanied by a strong sea wave from behind the proudly standing cliff!

"Hmm, so what move you are going to use now, sneaking behind me?"

A smile with a touch of arrogance immediately crept over Luo Feng's face, although fresh blood was constantly bubbling out from his shoulder, but still he didn't care a bit. It must be admitted that he was indeed a tough guy, or probably was one crazy man.

"You don't have to know that."

Ye Feng snorted quickly, then glanced at the side where Long Wan'er was.

Because of the surprise attack launched by Ye Feng on Luo Feng a few seconds ago, his three fellow apprentices had already been drawn in a state of shock and had also stopped acting in astonishment. Although they had dragged Long Wan'er in the middle, but hadn't started to play with her yet. While on the other side, Long Wan'er was also somewhat startled by this sudden action, and was fixedly looking at those two

people fighting with each other.

Although the names of these two people didn't have much difference and their talent was also equally terrifying, but still, Ye Feng had clearly more potential, he was just at ten years of Cultivation, still, could enter into a battle with Luo Feng on the same level .....

Suddenly a surge of arrogance gushed out from Long Wan'er's heart as she thought that her man was definitely destined to be stronger than that man, Luo Feng!

Nowadays in the world of martial arts, there were a handful of people who had the ability to release their inner qi out of their body and Luo Feng was one of them. However, along with his three men, Not even Luo Feng was regarded as the martial arts genius.

But Ye Feng was the fourth one she knew.

"Boy, you're too wild."

Luo Feng burst out laughing : "Since you insist on meddling in this matter, I, Luo Feng, won't let you down and will certainly make you suffer to death!

He flung his both fists in the air, immediately his inner qi started boiling up and got condensed, taking the form of his Boxing Technique.

Paochui Boxing, the first fist was the Left fist! And the second fist was the Right one! And these two fists were sufficient enough while fighting against the general opponent. But if he would put forth the third layer 'Core Fist' then his penetrating power would be greatly strengthened to the extent where he could be even able to fight with a wild bull, besides its speed was also extremely fast!

Luo Feng was the most proficient in the third layer of this Core Boxing Technique.

"Brother Luo Feng must act seriously!"

"Hmm, let's say this boy has really a good luck, since he can experience the Boxing Technique of our senior apprentice, Luo Feng."



“Brother Luo Feng, quickly take hold of him and smash him to a pulp!”

Those three fellow apprentices of Luo Feng, while still holding Long Wan'er in the middle, began to mock and crack jokes.

“Mo brother, be careful, run!”

Once Nanfang noticed Luo Feng's attitude, his complexion immediately changed and he shouted one promptly.

“Be careful!”

Long Wan'er also shouted one softly, her beautiful eyes were all wide open, constantly staring at the boss of the group. However, she was very clear about God Fist Gate's Paochui Boxing as well as the might of the fist of the third layer of this Boxing Technique!

At this moment, among the people present on the scene, only Ye Feng was all calm and collected.

“Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation!”

As soon as he turned over his hand, a ball of fire immediately emerged out of his hand, then after by taking advantage of Luo Feng's startled and distracted mind, he flung it directly at him.

Bang!

Luo Feng hadn't had enough time to move and the whole person all of a sudden turned into a fireball!

## Chapter 160 - A Man's Decision

---

When Ye Feng congealed out a fireball, and the whole body of Luo Feng was set on fire, this scene suddenly gave a huge shock to the surrounding people.

Could a person really release a fireball so conveniently?

How was this possible, after all, it wasn't a fantasy movie!

Nan Fang was dumbstruck with astonishment and simply couldn't believe that this thing actually occurred right before his eyes. Although he was standing far away from Ye Feng, still could clearly see how Ye Feng merely waved his hand and a fireball emerged out of nowhere.

While the other three friends of Luo Feng were just blankly looking at the scene, completely motionless, as if they saw a ghost. The intensity of atmosphere scared them and made them yell right away. Not even in the martial arts world had they ever seen anyone who could emit fireballs like Ye Feng did just now. What the hell was this masked man, a monster?

The story didn't end here, not even Long Wan'er was left unaffected. When she saw this scene, she spontaneously covered her mouth, her beautiful pupils were left wide open while her mind was busy figuring out the identity of the martial technique that had just been used by Ye Feng. However, she had been together with him since morning and even got up with him in a completely naked state. She had been with him all this time but never saw him hiding anything then after along with him she went out, ran all the way to arrive at this place, but all this time she hadn't seen him hiding anything, ah!

"Ah ah ah!"

Luo Feng never thought that his opponent would turn out to be so strange and would suddenly release a fireball.

His whole body was burning, forcing him to utter a blood-curdling screech. At this time, he finally understood that this situation was far from good therefore he promptly set his inner qi into action to resist against the fire while rapidly running towards the edge of the cliff to jump off.

“So you wanna jump into the sea to quench the fire?”

Ye Feng quickly read the intention of the opposite party and couldn't help but secretly praise Luo Feng for his quick-wittedness. At present, his Immortal Technique 'Red Inflammation' had only reached the first layer, although the flame's temperature was quite high, but was actually still like an ordinary flame which could be easily extinguished with water. So naturally anyone, who would be in this situation, would choose to jump into the sea.

“Dragon Claw Hand Technique!”

Ye Feng promptly cast out this move, and immediately, Zhenqi rushed out of his body and grabbed Luo Feng's bleeding shoulder while his another hand grasped his thigh and dragged him back!

Luo Feng had already jumped down the cliff and was in midair. Soon, he was about to fall 10 meters down the high cliff. However, right then, he was suddenly caught by Ye Feng in midair and was almost pulled back to the cliff.

Fortunately, his cultivation was very profound. Even though his whole body was surrounded by flames, still, he quickly responded by immediately jolting his inner qi. Hence, when Ye Feng grabbed his body, his Zhenqi was immediately dispersed. Afterward, even without using a proper base in mid-air, he managed to jump far away by making use of the propelling force generated by the dispersed Zhenqi.

Puff!

Shortly after, a human fireball fell from the cliff into the mighty waves of the turbulent seawater and instantly disappeared.

If an ordinary person had jumped down the cliff, there would certainly

be no way out for him. Even if there was seawater under the cliff, it had a depth of more than 30 meters which was sufficient enough to engulf anyone. However, Luo Feng wasn't an average man, he was a genius who had a profound Cultivation of twenty-five years !

Even in this state, he could conveniently use his inner qi to protect himself, which proved that certainly, he would also be able to slow down his falling speed. Obviously, he wouldn't plunge to his death.

“He ran away.”

Ye Feng's complexion turned gloomy and he immediately ran to the edge of the cliff, then looked ahead, but there was no trace of Luo Feng to be seen anywhere. Not even his Soul Search Technique could feel anything, it seemed that he had been carried more than 100 meters away by the sea waves.

“Brother Mo , thank you for protecting me.”

By this time, Nan Fang had already calmed down: “Luo Feng has certainly been seriously injured. And if the storm starts soon, then he won't get a chance to come ashore and would surely die in the end. If we start looking for him in the nearby areas, then, should be able to intercept him .....

While saying, he turned his head to look around and noticed Long Wan'er and the three fellow apprentices of God Fist Gate were still glued to the spot where they were standing. Which in return forced him to think that since these three guys had seen Ye Feng's secret, so they should certainly be silenced.

However, he had a little doubt in his heart actually, how in the world was that fireball used?

Besides, now he was also one of them who had seen Ye Feng's secret, in that case, was Ye Feng also going to eliminate him? He could understand that Ye Feng really wanted to save him, but when Ye Feng discovered that he couldn't beat Luo Feng, then helplessly, he had to use the Assassin's mace.

However, even if he was killed by Ye Feng now, he still wouldn't have any complaint because, in any case, he made Luo Feng to suffer a major loss, almost to the extent of coming very close to live cremation. Therefore, ending his life this way was definitely much better than getting killed by Luo Feng's hands.

“Wan'er, come over here.”

Ye Feng waved his hand, immediately his Zhenqi burst out, Red Inflammation! Instantly three fireballs, one after another, rushed towards those three God Fist Gate's disciples with a lightning speed, and in a blink of an eye, set them on fire.

Those three had merely 10 years of Cultivation, facing Ye Feng's Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation, without having even the basic resistance capability was truly heart-chilling. They didn't last long enough like Luo Feng to be able to jump into the sea and burned to crisp, without even getting enough time to scream in pain.

Although the flame was like an ordinary flame, but the temperature was much higher in comparison.

In a matter of few moments, they disappeared from the face of the earth!

While on the other side, Ye Feng had displayed Red Inflammation four times at a stretch and his Zhenqi had already depleted to a significant extent, but he had no other options to choose from. Red Inflammation was the only method he had currently that could destroy corpses without leaving any trace. For him, it had become a necessity to get rid of those three disciples.

Long Wan'er immediately ran over to his side and swept her hands around Ye Feng's arms: “Are you all right?”

“It's nothing, I am all right.”

Ye Feng nodded as he gently patted her shoulder.

Then he turned his head around and glanced at Nan Fang, soon noticed that his eyes were emitting the feeling of gratitude accompanied

with an expression of shock. In the cold wind, Nan Fang's somewhat pale looking face was actually covered with several wisps of confused expressions.

“Many many thanks to Brother Ye for your help.”

As per the custom of the martial arts world, he cupped his fists and gave a formal salute to Ye Feng! Now he was sure that Ye Feng wouldn't kill him to eliminate a potential informant, which made him a bit relieved, however, his eyes still had a hint of visibly clear yet complex look.

As a man, relying on others to confront one's personal enemy was simply unacceptable to him. The prime culprit who exterminated his whole family (family means gang) was Cai Shaohong, but he was also eliminated by Ye Feng. Not only this, even the armed escort Zhui Hun wasn't spared by him. And just a few seconds ago, Luo Feng was nearly killed by him. So in the end, what really was the use of Nan Feng's existence now?

“Those who are on our side, don't need to be formal.”

Ye Feng waved his hand: “Managing one's business properly is always important, what kind of hatred you harbor against that man Luo Feng?”

On the one hand, he inquired about this issue, while on the other hand, he arrived at the side of that cliff, where that vividly rooted big tree was. Soon his golden sword flashed and directly cut open the tree's roots!

Just as expected, the two ancient rare books were deeply buried in the soil surrounding the tree's roots, nobody knew since when had they had been there. However, the underground pests had been unable to damage the books, obviously, because the quality of the material these two books had was of some special kind.

Nan Fang heard that and while looking at Ye Feng's actions, said: “He is my older brother but was sent to God Fist Gate in his childhood. Last year when Southern Heavenly Gate was completely destroyed, I went to seek help from him, but not only he remained unmoved, also threatened me that I was not at the same level as him. He even told me that he

would let me off this once, but afterward, I am prohibited to look for him .....

His manner of speaking had a touch of intense hatred! Being the member of Nan Clan, not only his brother Luo Feng entered God Fist Gate, even changed his surname. More disgusting was the fact that he exterminated his whole Nan Clan. What kind of evil human this Luo Feng really was?

Ye Feng almost knew what the matter was, anyways, he picked up the two rare books.

“Hidden Immortal Technique and Crying Ghost Blade Technique, both are indeed very useful techniques.”

“Here you go.”

Ye Feng conveniently tossed them into the hands of Nan Fang.

However, Nan Fang was taken aback by Ye Feng’s unexpected action.

He looked at those books and suddenly his mind was blown away, not only Ye Feng didn’t kill him, but also handed him over two very valuable looking rare martial books , and that too so conveniently?

Nan Fang was not that kind of a person who would like to be put under another person, however, right now the enticement he had before his eyes was really quite huge, therefore he was unavoidably tempted.

He also deeply understood that nowadays in the arena of the martial world, consisting of several major schools, if a trivial being like him would intend to obtain a rare martial arts book, how much difficult it would be for him! Moreover, in case, Luo Feng wasn’t dead yet, he still had a fair chance to take his revenge on his own!

But again he was very clear that Ye Feng rescued him obviously because there was a purpose behind that, to train him to become his subordinate.

Nan Fang pondered for a while, then raised his head and looked towards Ye Feng.

Today, he must make the decision like a man!

---

*Disclaimer : Hi guys, there are few points which confused me earlier. Therefore, I decided to make this clear to you guys as well. Kindly read these below-mentioned points to get the clear picture :-*

1. The word 'Nan' means South, which has been used in this novel in three contexts – for Nan Fang, for 'Nan Clan' and for 'Nantian Gate as Southern Heavenly Gate after translation'.

2. Nanfang <- I have been using this name since the beginning. But now, after the arrival of his brother' Luo Feng' and his clan 'Nan Clan,' I got to know that originally his name was Nan Fang, where Nan is derived from his Clan.

3. Luo Feng was called Nan Feng before, but he changed his surname after joining God Fist Gate.



## Chapter 161 - Radical Member

---

Three people were standing on a tall cliff, feeling the strong wind blowing from the remote horizon. Although it was still morning, but the sun was actually covered with black clouds, making it appear very hazy.

The violent surging waves were rushing forth, constantly whipping the rock under the cliff. All these signs were indicating that very soon a storm was about to hit.

Nan Fang raised his delicate white face and looked towards Ye Feng.

“I’ll study.”

He said in a muffled voice.

After considering this matter for a long time, he finally made the decision he would be proud of throughout his life.

Even though he became ready to follow Ye Feng, but the point was how?

Cai Shaohong was already dead, while Luo Feng was also not a suitable match for Ye Feng. His great hatred was doomed to be already reported. Suddenly his mind went blank since he didn’t know that in the future which course he should follow.

At this moment, Nan Fang’s heart was hit by a somewhat strange feeling, since he arrived in this world as a man, how couldn’t he leave anything behind? He believed that Ye Feng wouldn’t let him down.

“Hmm. Where should we go, to the seacoast to look for Luo Feng?”

Ye Feng finally smiled and nodded his head. Currently, Luo Feng was in a seriously injured state, if Ye Feng didn’t kill him now, didn’t it mean leaving a trouble to return in the future? Just a moment ago he used the Immortal Technique – Red Inflammation, but surprisingly it seemed that Luo Feng was already prepared to some extent, indeed he wasn’t so

easy to succeed.

“Well, is this my older brother’s wife?

Nan Fang looked at Long Wan’er wearing a white face mask, as he inquired.

“Pretty good. But concrete thing first, don’t rush to say anything, have received the rare books, now first try to find Luo Feng.

Ye Feng nodded, then looked under the cliff, the coastline wasn’t that long, probably only a few kilometres long with winding twists and turns. The entire Xiangshan County was a peninsula and currently the place where the three people were standing was located in the southern peninsula’s island reef.

Trying to find Luo Feng was presumably not at all difficult.

Those three people mutually saw each other, as if they wanted to detour to the bottom sea beach to seek for Luo Feng’s trail. However right at this moment, Ye Feng’s Soul Search Technique indicated him something and suddenly he tightened his guard.

In the woods of the northern background, unexpectedly a group of people rapidly appeared and peacefully encircled the cliff where these three people were.

They were the people of National Security Agency!

Ye Feng’s technique was very keen and sensitive, therefore he saw through the status of the opposite party at once.

“Hey, you three people, all raise your hands.”

A gloomy but powerful male voice passed on from the woods, making the three people feel the danger exactly like being attacked by the scorpion!

A team consisting more than twenty National Security Agency soldiers, fully armed, suddenly showed up and formed a semi-circle on the cliff to encircle these three people. While standing behind the team members, was a young Captain, with a thin stature, wearing a western-style suit,

accompanied with a pair of gold edge eyeglasses. He crossed his hands behind the back and stood firm while holding a cajolery expression on his face.

“The things you have in your hand, hand them over to me.

His command sounded a bit ordinary, through his golden eyeglasses, he looked towards Nan Fang and read the name of the two rare books which he had in his hands.

“What will you do with them?”

Long Wan'er couldn't think through, a bit puzzled said : “National Security Agency is only responsible for arresting the criminals present in the world of martial arts. We haven't threatened any ordinary person from the secular world, still, why did you block us?”

“Ah.”

The Captain chuckled and pushed his eyeglasses up : “Is it? Whether threatening the ordinary people or not, National Security Agency has its own way of judgment, so we are not bothering you. You martial artists always bully small and weak people, even our country can't do anything to control you people. However, if everything happens according to what I wish, then I'll eliminate each and every one of you, without exception!

“You are Li Feng!”

Long Wan'er heard that which reminded her something and she tightened her grip to grasp Ye Feng's arm.

Li Feng?

What was this character?

Obviously, Ye Feng didn't know this fellow, therefore carefully he looked at him and soon discovered that the eyes of the opposite party had an intense look, a look clouded over with a contemptuous and loath feeling. From his words, it was quite apparent this fellow looked down upon the martial arts people very much, didn't he?

Besides, he actually threatened that he must remove all martial artists

from the face of this world .....

“Oh, it seems to me that Li Feng’s fame is still pretty huge.”

Li Feng smiled faintly, then raised his hand : “All raise your hands, I am giving them eight minutes to consider, otherwise will resort to open fire.

These words barely fell and immediately standing in front all twenty National Security Agency soldiers simultaneously lifted their precision firearms in their hands and aimed at Ye Feng along with the other two people!

The firearms of NSA were top notch, therefore shouldn’t be overlooked. And Ye Feng already had a profound experience of this fact, therefore he admonished his heart to be alert at all times. However, the strange point was, why did the opposite party want to give them a period of eight minutes for consideration?

“This is Li Feng’s usual trick.”

Long Wan’er, while still leaning on Ye Feng, said softly: “It is said that Li Feng is hostile to the martial artists since childhood. Now that he has become the Captain of NSA, if any single martial artist falls into his hands committing any crime, absolutely wouldn’t have the good end. Moreover, he has also been advocating all along to exterminate the entire martial arts world without exception .....

“Arrogant enough.”

Ye Feng narrowed his eyes and gazed at him from across his mask.

Li Feng pushed up his eyeglasses, a strong wind was blowing around his body, making his cloth flutter. However, wearing a western-style clothing, his appearance was looking very imposing.

His eyes were also revealing a trace of ruminating look.

Every time he ordered to arrest a martial artist, he always used to give eight minutes to the opposite party for consideration, so that in this short period he could carefully observe the opposite party from the beginning

of his pride to the time of his submission, and could finally see him crawling like a dog in front of him.

“Eight minutes ...”

This time, this short period had special significance for Li Feng!

In National Security Agency, he was considered as a radical member without any doubt, since consistently he had been insisting on the suppression and extermination of entire martial artists from this world. This was the reason why he held a very high reputation in the martial arts world. Certainly, this fame was infamy.

At present, on that towering cliff, both sides had begun the confrontation!

“Li Feng is indeed an interesting person.”

Ye Feng chuckled loudly, then comfortably embraced Long Wan'er while looking towards Nan Fang. Those two rare books were buried underneath the tree for so long, still wasn't damaged by the insects. In that case, could it be that they shouldn't be also afraid of the water? Ah, so after jumping into the sea, they wouldn't need to be worried about them.

In his mind, Nan Fang was very suitable for practising this kind of hidden weapon martial arts technique, because he was good at hiding and camouflage. As per the rumour, this martial arts technique 'Crying Ghost Blade Technique' once paved the way of a hidden Immortal School towards success, so naturally its effect wouldn't be disappointing.

Presently the key question was, how to protect Long Wan'er and Nan Fang, since jumping down from such a high place would be surely dangerous for them.

There were merely eight minutes to consider.

Ye Feng's train of thoughts started running wildly, in such a small and narrow space, if the other party started firing indiscriminately, then these three people would certainly get killed. Moreover, neither his Invisibility nor Camouflage would work in this situation. So if he wanted

to escape, then only had one option left and that was jumping into the sea.

.....

At this time, on the other side, Luo Feng had grabbed the opportunity to swim to the shore of a small fishing village.

All martial artists had started gathering in this small fishing village because the big Coral King was nearby. In addition, its maturity time was tonight.

When Luo Feng landed there in a totally tattered condition, accompanied with burnt skin, immediately stirred up a group of martial artists, turning them all shocked!

“Who has hurt you like this?”

God Fist Gate’s the great elder Xu Xiaoyu, who dared to speak satirically before Long Mo’ran in the Changbai Mountain, was also there waiting for tonight. However, when his eyes fell on his beloved disciple, who was in such a miserable condition, he immediately lost his cool.

Xu Xiaoyu’s status was next to one of the two main elders of God Fist Gate, and had a reputation of “Nandou god fist”, in order to rely on the gentle and soft boxing technique, one needed to be sturdy with ample strength, since it was quite hard to deal with. At present, he already had reached 80 years of Cultivation!

And as for Luo Feng, he was his most favourite disciple. In today’s martial arts world, Luo Feng’s talent was sufficient enough to make him stand in the top three.

“A masked man ..... on the cliff ..... can release fireball ... ..”

After running for a while, Luo Feng finally fell down on the beach.

Could release fireball?

At this time, Xu Xiaoyu was burning with fury, in the end, who was responsible for Luo Feng’s condition? How could someone in this world release a fireball, he thought that he must not be Harry Potter, right?

## Chapter 162 - Approaching Hardships

---

In the world of the martial arts, Luo Feng's status was extremely illustrious.

Although God Fist Gate wasn't considered as one of the three big influences but was still next to the three big martial arts school. As for Lu Feng, his talent was already well known, besides he also had a huge support of "Nandou God Fist", Xu Xiaoyu. Interestingly, just because of his backing, Luo Feng's conduct was totally unrestrained in the martial arts world.

However today, not only he was badly beaten up by someone and got serious injuries, but was also severely burned. This unexpected sudden incident was sufficient enough to make any person feel surprised.

'Nandou God Fist', Xu Xiaoyu was a white-bearded old man, however, his body was healthy and robust, while his fighting strength was unambiguous. At the moment, he was bubbling with wrath, indirectly making the people of that small fishing village immediately support Luo Feng and carry him inside a house. Besides this, he also immediately led more than a dozen disciples of God Fist Gate, brimming with enormous power, to leave this village at once and head toward the towering cliff located on the western side of this village.

This small village was not only swarmed with several God Fist Gate's people, but numerous people from various schools and Clans were also gathered there, including Long Clan.

At this time, Long Mo'ran wasn't standing very far away from Long Zi and Long Qing, who were presently discussing matters while standing far from the crowd, watching Luo Feng struggling to run. However as soon as his eyes fell on the white-bearded old man, Xu Xiaoyu, he could not help but immediately frown.

“A masked man who could release a fireball?”

Long Mo’ran’s heart was immediately stirred up, he snorted coldly, waved his hand and said : “Long Zi and Long Qing, you people come along with me, I must have a look to affirm whether the man in the mask was that kid or not!”

“Yes.”

Long Zi and Long Qing, both of them looked each other and immediately replied.

Long Qing looked like a twenty-seven-year-old man, with a face which always had an expression of being idle. When this swinging son of Long Mo’ran’s elder brother heard that they had to go looking for the masked man, he immediately turned somewhat excited.

While nearby standing Long Zi actually knitted his eyebrows. He was once caught by Ye Feng’s invisible Dragon Claw Hand in the midair from quite a distance, therefore was very clearly aware how strong the mask was, an incredibly talented guy! Moreover, Long Wan’er had also already recognised the opposite party .....

What a pity.

Long Zi just looked at the back of Long Mo’ran and secretly shook his head while thinking in his heart that the head of his Clan was such a narrow-minded person.

The last time he came to the East China Sea, it was just to speak with Long Mo’ran about this matter. However, after listening to his views, Long Mo’ran said back then that no matter what kind of talent that masked man had, he still didn’t want to accept him as his son-in-law. And the reason was only one and that was his connection with Ye Feng.

The matters of twenty years ago, Long Mo’ran could never forget it during his lifetime!

“Since that guy is on the cliff, the girl will also be there definitely. So when the times comes, look tightly and grab the two of them.



Long Mo'ran commanded one holding a firm looking facial expression, afterwards, he turned around to go out of this village. A simple looking sword scabbard was hanging around his waist which was quite noticeable.

Long Zi and Long Qing also followed him, however in front of these three people was 'Nandou Fist Gate', Xu Xiaoyu, as well as a big group of more than ten God Fist Gate's disciples.

However, Long Mo'ran wasn't afraid of confronting Xu Xiaoyu, because in his view, only after finding the masked man, he would qualify for judgement. As for God Fist Gate? Same thing applied to them.

Although Long Mo'ran definitely had less than sixty years of Cultivation, however, due to his strange talent, he could even practice the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique shockingly. Even if he stood against 'Nandou Fist Gate', Xu Xiaoyu, who had a mighty eighty years of profound Cultivation, he wouldn't look inferior to him, not even the slightest bit.

This was one of the three big influences, the strength and domineering of the head of the family of Long Clan!

Two groups of people started rushing towards the towering coastal cliff, which was five kilometres away. By this time, this chaos had also attracted the attention of several other figures of the martial arts world and gradually aroused their curiosity one after another, making them also think to start following them.

They wanted to follow them just to enjoy watching a bustling scene but were afraid of being dragged into the cyclone of disaster. Hence they chose to stay far away from this, but still to keep watch from a distant place.

The violent surging waves of the sea and the dark cloudy sky, accompanied with a storm of great figures of the martial arts world, running all the way, was constituting an epic classical landscape.

...

Five minutes had passed so far.

Still hugging Long Wan'er, Ye Feng was standing calmly, waiting for a propitious opportunity to jump into the sea to escape.

While, Li Feng just wanted to see them submitting in front of him, but judging from their looks on their faces, it didn't seem like happening. This made him secretly unhappy. Obviously, as one of the Captains of National Security Agency, he still had some patience left in him so he leisurely pushed his golden eyeglasses upward and continued to wait.

Beyond the towering cliff, there was the vast East China Sea and it seemed like its stormy waves were piled up with a huge amount of snow and ice while the raging waves were constantly bombarding them towards the cliff, causing the smooth erosion of the rocks.

The strong winds blowing from the distant horizon were getting more and more violent, accompanied with a layer of dark clouds, rapidly advancing towards them to engulf them.

The storm was approaching fast.

Several seabirds which were occasionally seen in the sky were taken aback and to avoid this disaster, they flew away into the coastal woods and quickly disappeared. While at this time, lightning had also begun to suddenly appear from the distant horizon, and it appeared like they would engulf everything quite soon.

The clothes of these three people were fluttering in this cold sea breeze, while the leaves were swirling in the air under their clothes, which were looking particularly dreary.

“What should be done?”

Long Wan'er, while leaning on Ye Feng's arm, said that. Since she couldn't see the expression he had then on his face, therefore she asked that in a soft voice, accompanied with a bit of nervousness surging in her heart.

Li Feng, this name was really very popular in the entire martial arts world like the thunder piercing the ear.

Even if a martial artist didn't commit any crime, but still he fell into his hands, then absolutely he wouldn't have any good result in the end. As for their present situation, not only their masks would be torn off for sure, but those two rare martial arts books would also be seized by him.

As for the resistance?

While confronting the people of National Security Agency, there were just a handful of people who dared to resist and even killed a National Security Agency' soldier for his safety. However, after that, they were sentenced to death in accordance with the special regulations. Luckily even if they escaped, then soon they were declared as the most wanted criminal throughout the country.

Such as Tornado Axe, armed escort Zhui Hun, and other wanted criminals. They all confronted this kind of situation and then, later on, became quite miserable.

Long wan'er thought that from now on there was no existence of leeway for them in this country China.

"Relax."

Ye Feng softly replied. However, right then, his eyebrows suddenly wrinkled upward, since he sensed from quite a distance using his Soul Search Technique that a group of people were running fast towards them from the eastern side.

A huge flock of martial artists!

"God Fist Gate's people?"

Ye Feng very quickly discovered that the group was being headed by the person whom he had met once in the Changbai Mountain, who also had the guts to mock Long Mo'ran and speak satirically right in front of him, and that was the white-bearded old man with cold irony.

All of a sudden, he felt that the upcoming situation would certainly worsen everything. Who would have thought that Luo Feng could run this fast, not only that, he even crossed five kilometres in such a short period of time and also drove the people of God Fist Gate towards them.

The silhouette of the white-bearded old man and his group of disciples were quickly approaching, but suddenly another character also appeared within Ye Feng's radar and accelerated his heartbeat. Actually, he sensed an appearance with a hanging old scabbard around his waist, that was none other than that cold and indifferent man, Long Mo'ran!

"Your father is here."

Ye Feng said to her in a whispering tone.

"What?"

She heard that and immediately turned a bit nervous, Long Mo'ran had arrived there, what if they were caught .....

Nan Fang was also standing beside them, holding a solemn but respectful expression, but his mind was constantly thinking about some countermeasures. However after much deliberation, meeting the radical member of NSA, Li Feng, on top of that at such a place, now he didn't have any word to say.

However, right at this moment, suddenly the members of NSA similarly found that the people of God Fist Gate, as well as Long Clan, had also arrived there.

Li Feng supported his golden eyeglasses while staring at the white-bearded old man, who was then leading more than ten people to rush towards them in a threatening manner. Therefore, he immediately, a bit coldly shouted: "National Security Agency will handle this matter, so other people evacuate at once!"

The originally leisurely atmosphere, immediately changed, since they were now at daggers drawn!

"Good opportunity."

Without hesitating a bit, Ye Feng turned around, immediately pushed Nan Fang's body and made an effort to jump down the cliff quickly.

Although the people of National Security Agency immediately responded, but didn't get sufficient time to act. While by this time, Ye

Feng along with Long Wan'er had already jumped down, and the three shadows had finally disappeared from that cliff right before their eyes.

On the one hand, there were surging waves under the cliff, while on the other hand, the lightning storm, rushing from the horizon, was also getting closer!

## Chapter 163 - Long Mo'ran's Sword

---

In an instant, Ye Feng took the lead and pushed Nan Fang down the cliff, immediately after that he closely grasped Long Wan'er and also leapt along with her.

Just within a fraction of seconds, the three figures quickly fell from the cliff towards the surging waves in front.

“Dragon Claw Hand Technique!”

Although Ye Feng was in the midair but he suddenly grasped the rapidly advancing downwards Nan Fang, making his declining trend stop abruptly. Afterwards, he started proliferating his Zhenqi and quickly formed a layer of very soft Zhenqi cushion on the sea surface.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

One after another, the three people fell down into the mighty waves of the choppy sea. On the one hand, he had been continuously holding Long Wan'er all along, so that she didn't get flushed away by the turbulent current, while on the other hand, simultaneously he also congealed his Zhenqi out into two Dragon Claw Hands, pulling Nan Fang close to him all the way.

Now at this moment, suddenly his Zhenqi burst out and he started swimming rapidly toward the shore while constantly resisting the turbulent current under the sea surface.

Having similarly a decade of Cultivation, however, Ye Feng's strength was much stronger than Long Wan'er. The storm was approaching fast, with every passing moment sea waves were getting stronger and fiercer. Although Long Wan'er had ten years of Cultivation, still was completely unable to freely move in the water, not to mention the condition of Nan Fang.

Immortal Technique – Dragon Turtle Holding Breath!”

Ye Feng also felt that the pressure was really awfully huge, therefore immediately he displayed an Immortal Technique to turn his stature more agile and free in the water. As a result, all of a sudden his back inflated out, which immediately drew the attention of Long Wan'er and reminded her of that time when she was in the bottom of the lake together with him in the Changbai Mountain .....

The violent current entered bravely!

In a split second, the three people were already far away from the towering cliff and were constantly carried farther and farther away by the sea.

The mighty waves were surging wave after wave, while the sky was completely occupied by the black clouds, accompanied by the thunder lights which were frequently flashing and roaring from all around! The storm quickly hit the shore, even though Ye Feng was in the water, but still had a feeling of draining physical strength and unable to endure anymore.

Considering his present level of Cultivation, fighting against such a natural disaster was obviously extremely difficult for him as well. However, fortunately, they were not very far from the coast, or else it would have become even difficult for Ye Feng to survive.

After swimming quite a distance, the three people finally landed in the vicinity of another island reef, then after they took the breath of relieve. This island was farther away from the small fishing village, even Ye Feng didn't know the location. However, on judging its lush vegetation, it seemed that this place was very remote and there was certainly no existence of other people living on it.

Still holding the completely drenched body of Long Wan'er tightly in his arms, Ye Feng immediately said: "Walk inside, light a fire to rest."

He was not a bit afraid that they might get discovered by Long Mo'ran because of the evidence left by lighting a fire. Anyway, they were just taking a break to rest and then would leave, so there was nothing to be afraid of.

“Hmm.”

Even though Long Wan'er had ten years of Cultivation, still now at such a crucial time, because of ice-cold seawater, she was shivering hard, besides her long dress was completely drenched and had stuck close to her body, making her exquisite body appear extremely vividly, while her beautiful and long, dripping wet hair was spread all over her shoulders. There was even a sign of little inclination on her white face mask.

Nan Fang just glanced towards her and immediately turned away his line of sight. He had a very clear understanding that presently, in such a situation, not seeing Ye elder brother's woman would certainly be a good choice .....

However, if compared with Long Wan'er, his condition was also not much better than her. There was a layer of thin frost gathered on his eyebrows, making him look very miserable.

The storm was almost about to hit, even the temperature of the East China Sea had abruptly plummeted, the sea water had already turned icy-cold, which was totally different from the usual form it had generally in the month of June.

Three people started looking for a shaded place, while Ye Feng displayed the Immortal Technique – Red Inflammation and promptly lit a huge pile of firewood just like a bonfire. The extremely warm temperature caused by it, instantly made the three people feel all warmed up.

However Long Wan'er as well as Nan Fang, both felt very strange deep inside their hearts, after all, how could Ye Feng create a fireball out of nowhere? But they didn't ask anything since they very clearly knew that Ye Feng would certainly share this secret with them at the right time.

While after being all warmed up, Nan Fang opened the tightly protected two rare books, which he had kept in his bosom before jumping and then started studying it under the instructions of Ye Feng.

...



On the towering coastal cliff, Xu Xiaoyu and Long Mo'ran, along with their own people rushed over there, but suddenly saw Ye Feng along with the other two people jumped down the cliff right before their eyes.

“Search everywhere!”

Xu Xiaoyu fiercely shouted out loud, while his white beard appeared incomparably elegant floating in the cold wind.

“Slow down.”

Upon seeing several martial artists ran over there out of the blue, the National Security Agency's radical member, Li Feng's golden edge eyeglasses shone up like a thundering-light of the black cloud, while his corners of the mouth revealed a trace of ruminating look : “Those three kids, must be handed over to us, the National Security Agency. Do you want to cause trouble? At present, must know your place and obediently accept the arrest!”

Seeing only his graceful gesture, four members of the National Security Council immediately dispersed to go, all prepared to jump into the sea to go along the coastline to look for Ye Feng along with the other two people.

Very obviously, Li Feng really harboured the deep-rooted old grudge against the people of the martial arts world.

“Hmm, Li Feng, not even my Nandou God Fist will scare you, hmm.”

Xu Xiaoyu snorted coldly. While remaining completely unmoved, he simply waved his hand, immediately making more than a dozen disciples of God Fist Gate, who were standing behind him, disperse right away and similarly start seeking for the trails of Ye Feng including other two.

“You dare run away?”

Li Feng contemptuously smiled : “Three teams, stop them!”

His world barely fell, and the four members of the National Security Agency immediately obeyed his order and lifted their hands carrying precision firearms at once, and as soon as the blue light blinked,

instantly pulled the trigger!

However it was not the usual blue-ray bullets, rather was a special trait huge net, which spread just like a fishing net and rapidly advanced towards them with a lightning speed and soon trapped those God Fist Gate's disciples inside it.

These nets were usually used by the National Security Agency to capture the martial arts criminals special equipment, even the ordinary sharp weapons were unable to cut it apart.

“You!”

Xu Xiaoyu hadn't thought that Li Feng would start his action rightaway, his both eyes desperately glared at him. Confronting the National Security Agency, he still didn't dare to revolt against them, besides, he practised the gentle and soft boxing technique, hence was also unable to destroy this kind of fishing nets.

Right at this moment.

Shua!

In the cold wind, suddenly a light flashed.

A natural and unrestrained stature suddenly fled from behind Xu Xiaoyu, immediately after a sword flashed and instantly cut the net into several pieces which had been actually projected by the National Security Agency.

Long Mo'ran was in action now.

The sword of his waist finally came out of the sheath.

“This is the matter of the martial arts world, there is no need for any bystander to come and take care of it.”

Long Mo'ran's stature suddenly stopped right in front of Xu Xiaoyu, then he calmly said, raised his head and pointed his long sword directly at the golden spectacted man, Li Feng. While confronting such a character like Li Feng, Long Mo'ran chose to maintain the martial arts common human honour, rather than following the tit for tat attitude of

Xu Xiaoyu.

However before Li Feng could react, his stature once again flashed, his superb and strong skill, multiplied with a terrifying speed, even the National Security Agency's firearms couldn't target to catch his movement.

A little cold awn instantaneously arrived in front of Li Feng.

Kachak!

His golden edge eyeglasses were cracked, while the stature of Long Mo'ran drifted far away, leaving only an unruly view of his back behind.

"Long Zi, Long Qing, immediately scatter to find them. Elder Xu, I hope that in case you find any one of them, you will certainly notify me sooner, that man in the mask is my, Long Mo'ran's personal enemy!

Long Mo'ran densely said.

Xu Xiaoyu heard that and secretly chuckled in his heart since he already knew what the viewpoint of Long Mo'ran was. Long Mo'ran was really an extremely unlucky man, twenty years ago his wife was abducted, and now her daughter was, and on top of that, again this issue was related with Ye Clan.

If Xu Xiaoyu exchanged places with him, then having such a gorgeous daughter, who had such a great connection with the masked man with terrifying talent, he would have been already very glad to grin from ear to ear. In that case, why would he act like how Long Mo'ran acted just now?

Naturally, Long Mo'ran's skill was already extremely exquisite, which had even gone against the heaven's will, therefore it seemed that he didn't need to keep such a focus on a fledgeling boy.

"Rest assured, if that being the case, we will cooperate to find them."

Xu Xiaoyu snorted lightly, then turned around to depart. As for Long Mo'ran, he already had made his move by helping him breaking the siege, the favour he had done, this must be paid back to him for sure. No matter how to say it but Elder Xu was a very old man in the martial arts

world, certainly he wouldn't see through this point.

On seeing that both Xu Xiaoyu, as well as Long Mo'ran had left the place leading their people, suddenly a gloomy expression crawled over Li Feng's face since he couldn't forget how his golden edge eyeglasses were cut into pieces by Long Mo'ran's sword.

The head of Long Clan, Long Mo'ran was really like a thorn ... .. He thought that one day he must catch the whole lot of these martial artists and would finish them up at one fell swoop!

“All advance towards the front fishing village! Disband the residents, this time no casualties should take place!”

As the Captain of the National Security Agency, obviously, Li Feng couldn't forget his responsibilities. Therefore he moved into action right away! Besides he also couldn't let this incident slip away like nothing happened, he would surely take his revenge from Long Mo'ran one day.

## Chapter 164 - Bluffing And Blustering

---

By this time, along with the other two people, Ye Feng had left the island reef and had returned to the original seacoast.

At a distance, not very far away from that small fishing village, Ye Feng set up a magic array behind a megalith with the help of his Camouflage Technique, then after, these three people closely leant against it. From there they could see that a huge lot of martial artists were all over the place and were finding someone along the beach, naturally, without any doubt, they were looking for these three people.

Fortunately, they were in the magic array, hidden behind a huge boulder, so not even the precision instruments of the National Security Agency could sweep their traces.

“You guys stay here, in the meantime, I am going in the vicinity of the big Coral King to have a look at it.”

Ye Feng said to them.

“Hmm.”

Nan Fang nodded his head rightaway, besides, now he had also started obeying everything said by Ye Feng quite seriously.

“I’ll go together with you.”

However, on hearing that he was leaving alone, Long Wan’er didn’t feel relieved, hence said that out of concern.

Originally Ye Feng didn’t have any intention to take her along since was afraid of encountering any danger which might cause trouble to them. However now, he changed his mind as he thought that she was quite familiar with the people of the martial arts world, if by any chance they ran into any martial artist, in that case taking her along would always be a better option than a random guess.

“Well, that’s good. Then, Nan Fang, you stay here and continue studying the core technique of the Hidden Immortal School, while she will accompany me.

Ye Feng solemnly said.

Apart from only focusing on the activity and news related to the big Coral King, he also had to think up every possible method to kill God Fist Gate’s disciple, Luo Feng, otherwise leaving a trouble rightnow might return in the future with increased intensity.

Immortal Technique – Invisibility!

Instantaneously Ye Feng’s Zhenqi dissipated and directly enveloped them completely.

Displaying Invisibility Technique to walk outside the magic array, this might not be a good idea than staying in the magic array for the time being to ensure their safety. Since the possibility of getting discovered either by the NSA people or by the other martial artists with profound Cultivation would be on the higher side, therefore Ye Feng needed to be vigilant at all times.

They quietly left the boulder and proceeded towards the location where the big Coral King was with an extremely fast speed.

“The big Coral King is somewhere in the vicinity of the seabed. Around two weeks ago it was found, however, its maturity day is tonight, because of that there are a lot of martial artists around the big Coral King, guarding it.

While running parallel to Ye Feng all along, Long Wan’er explained things to him in-between.

He heard that and nodded his head, he just wanted to obtain the big Coral King at all cost and propitiously the opportunity to fulfil his wish was tonight. Once the night passed, he might not get the second opportunity to grab it.

The two people ran along the seacoast. However at this time, continuously the surging waves were whipping the shore, simultaneously

causing little splashes of sea water, accompanied with water sprinkles aiming directly on the two of them, making them feel as if the iciness had stabbed their bone.

The strong winds were continuously getting stronger and fiercer; while the thunders' lightning was also getting more and more bright. Besides, the pea-sized raindrops finally began pouring down in torrents. On taking a broad view of the scene, it seemed that the entire sea waves were surging, accompanied with the torrential downpour, making the entire world look like hanging up a curtain of water, layer by layer probably. Consequently, the visibility was badly disrupted and it sharply declined.

One after another the bursting sound of thunder, letting Ye Feng know that this storm would continue like this for quite a long period of time.

He took off his coat and draped over Long Wan'er body, then continued to move on along with her. Although he could use his Zhenqi to impede the raindrop, however, that was a total waste of his energy. What if after a while he bumped into any kind of unexpected fighting, for that he should always keep a contingency plan ready, so at present he needed to be a bit economical.

The big Coral King was not far from the location.

Very quickly, they covered three kilometres of distance away from the small fishing village. Now, from a distance, it seemed that there was a flock of people, looking like extremely strong martial artists. Altogether seven people were there, sitting in repose on the shore with eyes closed. Although torrential rain was pouring down in torrents everywhere, but on judging their expressions it seemed that they were not the least affected by this heavy rain.

"Finally arrived, but the big Coral King is away from this seacoast, probably two kilometres down in the bottom of the sea."

Long Wan'er, while leaning against Ye Feng closely, whispered: "These people are sent to guard the powerhouse of the big Coral King, every one of them at least has fifty years of Cultivation. Tang Clan, Long Clan and God Fist Gate, all of them have sent one person here to represent them

.....”

Ye Feng glanced at the pile of seven people and quickly noticed that each and every single person was an old man without exception.

“Are they just guarding the shore?”

Ye Feng saw them and couldn't help but feel delighted deep inside his heart. As the matter stood, the possibility of him getting hold of the big Coral King was on the higher side now!

Now in this condition, only his Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique could allow him to continue staying in the bottom of the sea for quite a long period of time. While the other martial artists, no matter how profound their Cultivation was, still they couldn't continue to keep watching every single second inside the sea.

“Hmm.”

She thought for a while, then nodded her head and said: “Let's go back, the big Coral King is being monitored by nearby installed electronic equipment, we can't succeed.”

To put it this way, she was still not optimistic about Ye Feng's success, but again this was pretty normal, after all, she didn't know the identity of Ye Feng as an Immortal Cultivator.

“Hmm.”

Ye Feng also nodded his head, the big Coral King hadn't yet matured, so the better option was to go to the fishing village first and quietly settle Luo Feng.

To take advantage of one's illness and finish his life, this was the only survival principle in the World of the Immortals.

The two hidden stature quietly ran back towards the direction of the village. On the one hand, Ye Feng was running hastily, while on the other hand, he cast out Camouflage, so as to promptly change his and Long Wan'er's cloth, height, mask and so on, just to guard against any contingency.



Finally, they arrived in that small fishing village, from quite afar Ye Feng could clearly see that currently this small village was actually flooded with several people of the NSA and under the leadership of so-called radical member Li Feng, they were strolling around the whole village with an exaggerated swagger.

In this small village, it seemed that all the original residents were already disbanded, leaving behind only a huge lot of people from the martial arts world strolling there everywhere.

However seeing the bluffing and blustering squad of Li Feng, nobody dared to stand and say anything.

“We will go inside directly without using Invisibility, or else we will surely attract people’s attention and will get found.”

Ye Feng had already made up his mind, so just stated that to her.

“Ah? Isn’t it so ... ..”

Long Wan’er was startled by his decision, wouldn’t it be extremely dangerous then?

“Nobody can recognize us, moreover your father and God Fist Gate’s people haven’t yet arrived here.”

He said that to comfort her.

Having the Camouflage on, both of them turned into totally different persons. If compared with the appearance they had previously in front of Li Feng, rightnow the only thing in common was there were again a man and a woman, hiding under masks.

However in the world of martial arts, wearing a mask was a common matter. Ye Feng simply swept his Soul Search Technique and immediately discovered that there were several people wandering around in this village while wearing masks, so that meant they didn’t need to be worried about it anymore.

Anyways, they walked inside to find the whereabouts of Luo Feng, so as to kill him on the spot and then quickly retreat!

In this torrential downpour, while holding each other's hands, these two people eventually entered the small fishing village.

Soon a muffled thunder resounded, letting Ye Feng discover that nearby Li Feng's golden edge eyeglasses were cut into pieces, the reason why he seemed a little distressed in this heavy rain, while his mood was also not very favourable.

"You, take off your mask!"

Li Feng said that as his finger pointed at a youth standing at the entrance of a peasant household, his voice seemed very dangerous just like a dangerous scorpion.

"Sorry, the mask can't be taken off."

That young boy immediately replied in a sinking voice, his voice sounded quite immature as if he was just a seventeen-eighteen-year-old boy.

"He is from Taiji Palace."

Immediately Long Wan'er stuck close to Ye Feng's ear and explained in a soft voice: "The main force of Taiji Palace usually handles matters at other places, it is said that although several people of Taiji Palace have been in the East China Sea nowadays, but only to snoop the news, not to plunder the big Coral King ....."

Ye Feng nodded as he thought that Taiji Palace was one of the three big influences in the martial arts world, but still they didn't participate in robbing the big Coral King, that explained there must be something more significant than this matter, right?

"Oh, you dare to resist, open fire, arrest!"

As soon as Li Feng heard that the youth in the mask refused to uncover his mask, he immediately waved his big hands.

Puff! puff! puff!

The soldiers of the National Security Agency immediately lifted their firearms and started firing at the youth, but again they weren't the blue-

ray gun, rather were the suppressing arteries guns, which were currently used to suppress that youth's inner qi.

The masked youth tried to dodge them, but was immediately hit by three bullets and in a matter of few seconds his Cultivation was suppressed!

Immediately after, two members of the NSA stepped forward as they wanted to uncover the mask of that powerless youth.

Upon seeing this situation, one by one each and every martial artist standing around turned a blind eye, since in their view, either they had to face Li Feng, or they could just ignore this matter and walk away. Moreover, every single one of them also knew their place fairly well in front of these precision instruments!

At this moment, Ye Feng suddenly felt Long Wan'er's small hand tightly held him while she was silently walking parallel to him.

## Chapter 165 - Warm-Blooded Martial Arts World!

---

Ye Feng narrowed his eyes to carefully watch the activity and behaviour of Li Feng as well as the other NSA people, actually he didn't want to meddle in this affair.

“Ah, Pooh!”

As soon as Li Feng saw that the mask of that Taiji Palace's youth was taken off, he spat out. Since the face appeared in front of them was an immature burnt face, which was extremely ugly and dreadful.

Now that the mask of that boy was cast off, he went crazy and started hitting and kicking two of the soldiers of the NSA, but since his inner qi had already been quelled, under this circumstances, in spite of whatever effort he made, it became merely a burst of futile effort.

“So ugly, you scared me.”

Actually, Li Feng hadn't expected earlier that something like this was about to unfurl, therefore he spat out contemptuously, then raised his foot and kicked that boy forcefully, making him turn over on the ground.

Upon seeing this, the surrounding martial artists couldn't help but despise him deep inside their hearts. Why did he want to uncover somebody else's mask? Or was he still scared to go and blame some other people? Even if that was the case, still no one took initiative to speak up for the boy.

As for the elders of Taiji Palace, none of them was available in the East China Sea currently. This boy arrived here just to scout out some information about the ordinary disciples.

However, even Taiji Palace couldn't dare to stand against the NSA. At this scene, nobody would be actually willing to substitute for the youth and offend the NSA, especially Li Feng, he couldn't be taken lightly.

Not everyone could be Long Mo'ran, that sort of abnormal man!

At present the youth was in a very miserable state, not only the youth was kicked to the ground, but was also completely drenched from head to toe due to the torrential downpour, while his entire body was also daubed with crushed stones and sand of the sandy beach, making him appearing very battered and exhausted.

His hand suddenly grabbed some sand from the ground and then he tightly clenched his fist, because of which his skin was bruised and started bleeding.

He was totally unwilling to reconcile!

Taiji Palace, in the entire martial arts world, commanded a very illustrious prestige and was very famous for its outstandingly fighting prowess. Whenever Taiji Palace issued an order, no matter which clan it was, Long Clan, Tang Clan or so on, they had to give some respect to them. But when it came to confronting the precision weapons of the NSA, they had no other choice left but to admit their defeat and be terrified.

He couldn't be reconciled!

This fellow was called Li Feng, but for what reason did he uncover his mask? Even the elders of Taiji Palace wouldn't be able to balance an account in this way. However, at present, such a thing happened, even if the elders came to know about this incident, still they might not go out looking for the NSA to take revenge.

Surprisingly, not even for the sake of that youth, Taiji Palace would ever dare to offend the National Security Agency.

"Hmm, totally boring."

Li Feng snorted coldly, subconsciously wanted to push his golden edge eyeglasses, but then he actually realized that his eyeglasses had already been cut into pieces by Long Mo'ran's sword, which made his heart feel extremely annoyed.

He came around that youth, then raised his foot and trampled him down his foot badly.

Since he couldn't cope up with Long Wan'er just a while ago, so now he had to vent his anger in any form on this fellow.

Snapped! Snapped!

In this heavy rain, the youth was being trampled upon, whether it was his personality, dignity, or other things, all things were heavily crushed by Li Feng's foot.

"This man Li Feng, he has crossed his limits."

Long Wan'er almost clenched her jaws.

Although they walked into this village from outside, but still nobody had noticed them. It was definitely because of the scene over Li Feng's side which was kind of too "splendid".

However, having felt the mood Long Wan'er had then, Ye Feng immediately entered into his pondering mode for a while, then said: "This man Li Feng, he is truly so hostile to the martial arts people, on top of that, since he holds a very high position in the National Security Agency, so from now on he will certainly bring a lot of trouble to us, might as well we should teach him a lesson, let me converge him ....."

This was totally a rash decision! That man Li Feng, his eyes just fell on a person wearing a mask and he couldn't control himself and did everything to uncover his mask. In case Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were also caught by him, then certainly they would have to go through the similar situation.

Rather than continue waiting until being pointed to the nose by Li Feng, might as well they should try to catch him off guard and give him a proper lesson. Moreover, since there was sufficient reason to take this step, hence Ye Feng didn't have even the slightest bit of psychological burden.

"Let me deal with him."

Ye Feng said in a whispering tone to her.

"But still you can't kill him."

She quickly stopped him : “Actually the position of Li Feng is kind of very high throughout the country, besides he is a very important and prominent personage in the country. If he dies, our entire martial arts world can never live in peace .....

“Then I’ll chop one of his arms down.”

Ye Feng lightly snorted.

Then he shifted his gaze towards those people of the martial arts world who were there, simply watching Li Feng’s actions from the sidelines, but nobody dared to come out and stop him. This thing forced him to have a contemptuous feeling in his heart.

Although these people were martial artists, still not a trace of courage and uprightness could be seen from their disposition, they were kind of too weak. If this were the World of the Immortals, then it was absolutely impossible for such incident to take place, instead, by now the people would have moved into action and have also killed him at one fell swoop. In worst case scenario, running away to the other end of the world would be the best option, since no one could do anything then.

At this point of time, on one side Ye Feng’s Zhenqi suddenly started condensing in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring. While on the other side, the boy who was being trampled upon by Li Feng, suddenly grabbed a handful of sand and tossed it towards Li Feng.

However, Li Feng had a flexible body, therefore, he immediately dodged it. Besides, as one of the Captains of the NSA, his physical fitness should be always up to the mark. Apart from this, since the inner qi of that boy was already in a suppressed state, therefore the speed of throwing sand wasn’t that quick, it couldn’t even touch Li Feng’s body.

“Oh, still throwing sand, you really have courageous spirit!”

A sinister smile immediately spread on Li Feng’s face, while his tone turned, even more, colder. He quickly snatched a blue-ray gun from the hands of the National Security Agency soldier standing aside and aimed directly at the boy’s head: “I am giving you eight minutes, just kneel down and apologize to me, crawl in front of my eyes, otherwise I’ll hit to

explode your head! ”

Eight minutes again!

Upon hearing this, the facial expression which had suddenly appeared on the faces of the surrounding martial artists then, truly exposed that Li Feng was exactly like the rumours, like giving people eight minutes of time for consideration.

The youth struggled a bit, his burnt facial cast appeared very fearsome, but in this heavy downpour, his emaciated stature didn't help him a bit and he felt very helpless.

“Pooh!”

But then all of a sudden he spat out a mouthful of saliva aiming at Li Feng, symbolising him that he would never compromise!

Li Feng quickly got out of the way where he spat, as an effect, immediately a trace of coldness flashed in his eyes as he thought that this kid really didn't deserve to be given any other chance to survive, he was too stupid, and today –

“This person showed disrespect to the senior official of National Security Agency, so in accordance with the special recuperation, we have the right to impose a death penalty on the spot!

He lifted the precision blue-ray gun and directly aimed at the head of that youth. Now the time had certainly come to pull the trigger!

All of a sudden, the surrounding martial artist couldn't bear continue watching the scene, since they all were already aware of the power of the blue-ray gun. Once this gun hit the head, there was no chance of survival. If he pulled the trigger, it would certainly explode that boy's head and lead to his death, in that case, not even the God could save him.

However, even if this was the situation, nobody stood up to oppose him.

In this world, every day several people die, why should they offend the NSA just to defend a kid who didn't even know the difference between



good and evil and went so far like humiliating the people of NSA?

Seeing him raising the gun, the eyes of that boy contracted, could it be that his tragic life was going to be put to an end today? However, the point was, up to now he really didn't know that how and when did he annoy this evil star of the NSA!

Was it because of the mask? Or because of his ugly-looking face? Or because he humiliated him by fighting back?

Whatever might be the reason, he really didn't have any intention to reconcile!

However, at this time, a trace of cruelty flashed though Li Feng's eyes as he thought that now it was necessary to pull the trigger.

Puff!

Suddenly the blood gushed out like a violent wind!

A golden sword flashed and instantly cut off one of the arms of Li Feng. And the next moment, his arm heavily fell to the ground, immediately followed by severely splashing blood which soon spread on the sand.

“Ah—”

This sudden incident left the entire audience completely shocked, they all were in an absolute silence state, only Li Feng's blood-curdling screech resounded all around, which appeared extremely irritating to the ear in this heavy rainfall.

Bang!

Thunder and lightning were crashing frequently, but they also actually failed to cover Li Feng's pitiful screams. Surprisingly someone still survived even though his arm was actually cut off, after all where exactly was the God?

Everyone present on the scene was truly thunderstruck by this sudden incident and they threw their gazes towards Ye Feng's back.

A masked man, clad in a black dress, just like a spectre suddenly appeared before them out of nowhere, holding a golden sword in his

hand, with dripping fresh blood, which was making it appear very bright and sparkling in this heavy rain.

The people of the martial arts world were really warm-blooded, so they deserved it!

*(Lastvoice : Warm-blooded people means those who don't get affected by the surrounding environment.)*

The boy raised his head and looked towards Ye Feng who was also in a mask, this boosted up his spirit and his eyes revealed a look of surging excitement.

He really hadn't expected that at such a critical moment, someone would actually come out to rescue him!

## Chapter 166 - Aunt Is Captured

---

The scene of the entire small fishing village seemed like was confined in this one act.

The heavy rain, just like a water curtain, was pouring crazily, a masked man, wearing black coloured clothes, holding a golden long sword in his hand, was quietly standing behind Li Feng, whose arm was just been cut off. But then suddenly Li Feng opened his mouth to scream out loud because the pain caused by chopping down his arm was not something the average person could endure.

In front of Li Feng, that burnt face boy was there whose eyes went wide open, while the motion of his heart was hard to return to its normal state, instead, it was surging more and more.

Indeed the martial arts world was warm-blooded!

The dripping blood was quickly washed away by the rainstorm, leaving behind only little traces. However, once again Ye Feng raised his right hand and placed his Zhenqi condensed golden sword directly in front of Li Feng's neck.

"The people of National Security Agency, don't act rashly or else my sword will truncate his head without a bit of hesitation, and for your information, I always live up to my words."

Ye Feng indifferently said so in order to put his control over Li Feng.

Having heard that, the surrounding more than 20 members of the NSA immediately entered the highest alert state, but since their Captain was under Ye Feng's control, they didn't dare to move into action.

On the other side, at this moment, all the martial artists present on the spot one by one stood up, completely thunderstruck they held their hearts and started discussing this incident.

All of a sudden one of the arms of the lunatic Li Feng of the NSA was cut off, this was actually an extremely important matter! Moreover, this matter hadn't yet finished, in case something bad happened to him or he was killed today, then the entire martial arts world would be turned upside down.

“Everyone, encircle him!”

Li Feng gnashed his teeth with extreme anger while enduring the severe pain, he roared loudly.

The NSA soldiers obeyed him and immediately surrounded Ye Feng holding the precision firearms in their arms, while Ye Feng and Li Feng were in their middle.

“What do you want to do, not afraid of getting killed?”

Ye Feng squinted his eyes and tightened his grip on the sword which was in his hands, could it be that Li Feng was a psychotic?

“Ha, ha .....

Li Feng smiled bitterly: “You really have courage ..... to kill me? Kill me then, but remember you also can't stay alive, ha, ha .....

He raised his another intact arm, seemingly because he wanted to give an order, making the soldiers of the NSA open fire directly at him. Literally speaking, he didn't have any intention to capture him alive, the reason why he wanted to kill him on the spot.

His hatred and old grudge against the people of the martial arts world had always been pillared by his extreme proud, making him never compromise to the martial arts people!

“Then you will right away descend to the hell.”

Suddenly coldness flashed through Ye Feng's eyes.

A moment ago whatever Long Wan'er said to him, he still remembered that, therefore he didn't want to let the martial arts world move into chaos, but that didn't mean he didn't have the courage to kill him. Now only a sword could resolve, instantaneously Rapid Shadow Immortal

Trace's second layer burst out, which was sufficient enough to grab Long Wan'er and take her away from the clutch of the NSA soldiers!

In addition, because of the effect of Camouflage, the NSA could never find the slightest evidence to prove that Ye Feng and Long Wan'er were together related to this incident.

When Ye Feng's hands just wanted to catch him up and slaughter him then and there, exactly then another familiar voice but actually with a hint of gravity passed on.

“All stop!”

All of a sudden another group of the NSA under the leadership of Thunder walked over there in an imposing manner!

If in the NSA, Li Feng was a radical, then Thunder was a conservative who had been consistently advocating the peaceful coexistence of both martial arts world as well as the secular world.

As soon as Long Wan'er saw someone from behind came over there, she immediately flew to the side where Ye Feng was. She didn't care a bit that a gun's muzzle was pointed at her by the member of the NSA. For her, staying together with Ye Feng at the same place was much more important than her life.

“This lunatic really knows how to stir up trouble.”

Thunder coldly shot a glance at Li Feng whose arm had been severed from his body, then turned his gaze towards the youth who was in a very difficult situation in this pouring rain, besides he also noticed a mask which was there thrown aside on the ground. Upon seeing this scene, now he didn't need to know what exactly was the matter.

“All the members of the NSA were assigned outside the village for guarding purpose, where they were also busy in carrying out the coastal residents' evacuation mission!

In this torrential downpour, he issued an order at once in a loud voice : “Take Li Feng and retreat, after that deliver him to the emergency hospital first. Hey brother, also please hit and make this man Li Feng

unconscious.”

“Thunder, you are worsening the situation!”

To endure pain, Li Feng bit his tongue, then bawled out : “Open fire and kill him .....

Bang.

However, all at once, with a hand knife, Ye Feng hit his head really hard and immediately threw him into the lap of dizziness.

“Now he is handed over to you.”

Ye Feng said faintly as he slowly released Li Feng: “However don’t blame me for open slaughter.”

In a flash of an eye, his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace’s second layer again burst out while its eruption speed was terrifically high, which was dangerous enough for him to kill and behead a group of the NSA people on the spot. And in worst case scenario, he could easily run away from the scene, afterall Ye Feng was an unusual hoodlum who could do anything.

“Everyone retreat, also take Li Feng along.”

Thunder’s mind was brimming with deep thoughts as he gazed at Ye Feng, simultaneously passed an order to his people.

On seeing the appearance of that masked man, Thunder felt that he was totally an unfamiliar fellow. However, from his golden long sword, he right away understood that this masked man was the same masked man whom he had seen before in the suburban area of Yanjing city.

“Also, respectfully informing you all martial arts’ towering figure.”

Before turning around to leave, Thunder left few words behind : “The weather forecasting office of the NSA has reported us that this time, the rainstorm is different from the usual one, because of which the temperature is also dropping sharply and abruptly. If you people still have to continue staying in the seacoast, then must take care of yourselves.

“Let’s go.”

Soon after, he sent all the NSA people along with the unconscious Li Feng and his severed arm outside the village not very far away by a green military truck, which roared away speedily.

Quite soon all the people of the NSA left the place, leaving behind an air of silence blowing throughout that small village, only the sound of the pea-sized rain drops hitting the ground was resounding everywhere.

While currently in the centre of the village, Ye Feng put away his sword and stood there silently along with Long Wan’er, while in front of these two people was that young boy who was struggling to get up, simultaneously groping about to find the mask and put it on again.

“Thank you .....

The boy’s voice sounded a little hoarse.

“It’s nothing, I was just passing by.”

Ye Feng said lightly, he wasn’t too much concerned about the boy, rather he was busy sweeping his Soul Search Technique around and soon he sensed something.

Currently, Luo Feng was in the house of the common people, completely unconscious lying on the bed, while the two people of God Fist Gate were guarding him. These two God Fist Gate’s people were middle aged men, who actually had forty years of Cultivation!

It seemed that Luo Feng was really very precious to God Fist Gate, otherwise, it wouldn’t have left such strong protective force there.

Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows as he thought that as per the situation, trying to kill Luo Feng wouldn’t be that easy.

“Long Mo’ran, as well as that white bearded old man along with their people, will soon return to this place, in that case, we shouldn’t act carelessly, instead we should leave here as soon as possible ... ..”

Ye Feng said that and immediately drew Long Wan’er close to him and embraced her in his bosom since he wanted to depart right away, but

then again he swept his Soul Search Technique and sensed something shocking in a single storied house of a common resident, which made him gawk on the spot.

Actually, the matter was, in that house a familiar person was shut off and surprisingly it was Long Wan'er's aunt Shu Shu, who was locked in a bedroom. In addition, she was also being guarded by an obese man who also had shockingly 30 years of Cultivation!

“How can you Aunt be here?”

Immediately Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows and said that to Long Wan'er in a whispering voice.

“What? It shouldn't be .....

Long Wan'er was startled for a while: “Was she discovered by my father? It's not good!”

She was deeply aware of the fact that if Long Mo'ran would come to know that her aunt had helped her in running away from the house, then that would be the end for her. Considering Long Mo'ran's personality, who could dare to defy his words!

“It's indeed not good.”

Ye Feng's complexion a bit darkened.

Since he again sensed that the obese man, who was in that bedroom, flashed a contemptuous smile at Shu Shu.

“... .. you bitch. Anyway, the head of the clan has already ordered me to execute you, but before your death let me play with you for a while merrily .....

Obese man stacked up a sinister smile on his face as he started trying to untie his belt.

However at this moment, once again Ye Feng's Zhenqi condensed out in the form of a golden sword.

He had a feeling that even if Long Mo'ran came back rightnow, still he would certainly not protect Shu Shu and would ignore this matter



completely!

## Chapter 167 - Long Mo'ran Shows Up!

---

A lightning flashed, immediately followed by a thunderclap which exploded in the sky near the small fishing village, making the entire village suddenly light up.

At this time, in the village, almost all of the martial artists were in a state of astonishment, even their eyes had an amazed looking expression in them. Ye Feng softly loosened the body of Long Wan'er and immediately after that, the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace suddenly broke out.

Just in a flash, he arrived in front of that common person's house about hundred meters away, leaving behind a series of blurred afterimages all the way.

Buzz!

In this torrential rain, his golden sword once again congealed out and was wielded towards the house, accompanied by a sudden burst of his Zhenqi, and the next moment, the roof of the house was pared to fly, making it crash loudly!

At this moment, the obese man was all prepared to take off his pants, but was all of a sudden exposed in the field of vision of the villagers. Through the swirling dust and sand in the air, he swept his eyes around and remained dumbfounded for a while.

What was going on? He just got ready to have fun with her, but who was this damned wretch who collapsed the house?

Instantly, the blood rushed to his head and he started burning with fury, he was a very important figure in Long Clan, so who would dare to ruin his mood like this, didn't he want to live!

Clang!

He pulled his sword out from his waist, then raised his head and gazed at Ye Feng who was standing outside the house, letting the torrential rain pour down on his body, while his eyes were revealing a fierce and malicious expression.

“Be careful!”

Immediately, Long Wan'er shouted from behind. Ye Feng could easily notice how scared she was from this fat man, besides, other than fear, her tone also had a touch of disgust for that man.

The surrounding martial artists also began to whoop.

“He, he, isn't that man Long Wuren from Long Clan?”

“Right, I have heard that this fatty is addicted to sex, just look at that beauty sitting in the corner, but wait, is she married into Long Clan?”

“Isn't that Shu Shu? What I have heard, around twenty years ago her husband died, look at her petite appearance, she still looks pretty and delicate, even I want to taste her .....”

In the collapsed house, Shu Shu's whole body was brimming with a matured and graceful charm. By this time, she had almost given up all hope, but after that sudden collapse, she raised her head and the figure that appeared in front of her eyes was Ye Feng, leaving her completely shocked for a moment.

Although his outward appearance wasn't quite same, but she still somehow felt that at present, this masked man was quite intimate with Long Wan'er and thinking about his unexpected appearance there to save her, immediately hit her heart by a kind and cordial feeling.

“Aunty!”

Without paying attention to other people around, Long Wan'er immediately ran over and wrapped her arms around Shu Shu, supporting her in the process. In order to protect her from the rainstorm, she immediately took her to the next door, under the roof.

Although Long wan'er was in the mask, but the moment Shu Shu heard

her voice, she immediately understood who she was.

Shu Shu raised her head and saw Ye Feng holding a long sword, all prepared to confront the obese man. Upon seeing this, Shu Shu's heart suddenly tensed up, while a trace of anxiousness appeared on her gentle face. Once she had heard Long Wan'er saying that 'Mo Jiuge' had only ten years of Cultivation, but right now, Mo Jiuge was standing against Long Wuren who had thirty years of Cultivation. The disparity was indeed extremely huge!

However on the other side, Long Wan'er didn't panic a bit, after all, she had already seen him fighting with Luo Feng, and as compared to Luo Feng, Long Wuner was still unqualified to be his opponent. The only thing to be worried about was in front of so many people, Ye Feng certainly couldn't expose his secret techniques like the fireball.

"I must resolve this battle in the shortest time possible."

Ye Feng grasped his sword a bit more tightly because he clearly knew the intensity of the present situation.

On the other side, Long Mo'ran along with the white bearded old man was searching for him in the vicinity, but now had appeared in the village, that meant he would definitely hurry back. By the time they would return, if Ye Feng couldn't resolve this fat man, then he might get into a huge trouble.

His opponent had thirty years of Cultivation, while his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace had already hit the second layer with a terrific eruption speed. In such case, his speed should be almost similar to the opposite party, but if he coordinated it with Camouflage, then he should definitely be able to kill the enemy in one fell swoop.

Right now, Long Wuren's long sword was placed horizontally, all prepared to set about. Soon after, he took the initiative and jumped into action.

"Brat, you asked for it!"

Long Wuren said holding a hideous and fierce expression on his face.

Immediately after, the long silvery white sword flashed in his hand, tainted with the rainstorm and was wielded horizontally, simultaneously he hit his foot heavily on the ground and the next moment, his whole stature swept forward towards Ye Feng.

Cutting through the air, his long sword speedily moved forward. Under the effect of his inner qi, even the pouring down rainstorm rolled up into a wave of water, just like a quick and fierce fire hose, accompanied with the coldness of the long sword, rapidly advancing towards Ye Feng.

“Romantic Sword Technique, sweep away the scattered clouds!”

Since he already knew the quality of this technique, therefore, immediately exclaimed aloud.

Long Clan’s exquisite martial arts technique, Romantic Sword Technique, was also considered as the sharpest killing technique. Even if an ordinary person with good talent was to learn this technique and display its first layer, still the might of his sword would be invincible.

“This is Romantic Sword Technique?”

Ye Feng felt a cold shiver in his heart as he thought that Long Mo’ran had already reached the third layer of this technique. If there was enough time in his hands, he could have gotten familiar with this technique, but what a pity, presently, he had no time to play with this fat man.

Even in the first layer of this sword technique, inner qi could be conveniently swept both horizontally and vertically, just like how whirlwinds can scatter clouds so easily.

This was a simple, swift, sharp, fierce and relentless sword technique!

Ye Feng’s footsteps moved quickly and the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace once again burst out with a terrifying speed, and all of a sudden, he took a half-turn in a flash to avoid the direct hit with a piercing blow of the fate. However, he was still hit by the long sword directly on his face and the fresh blood was immediately spurted out of his mouth.

The speed of his sword was seriously extremely fast. Although Ye Feng

had Soul Search Technique, his ordinary ten years of Cultivation was absolutely not enough to help him avoid such a sword attack.

Ye Feng then turned around towards the opponent and conveniently waved his sword, however, the coldness of his long golden sword accompanied with some water droplets, pared the stamina of the obese man.

Clang!

The reaction speed of the fatty was incredible, in a split second he turned his sword around and blocked the blow of Ye Feng's sword.

In this torrential rainstorm, the two swords collided with each other. At this time, Ye Feng right away felt the formidable inner qi of the opposite party conveniently sweeping through the long sword.

Clatter Clatter.

In this downpour, he couldn't help but retreat, two steps back, the disparity between their Cultivations was making him unable to cope up with his opponent.

"Flower falls, the autumn frost."

Long Wuren smiled as the corners of his mouth curled up, as if his smile had a brutal meaning behind it. Immediately then, his stature flashed and from behind, he aimed his sword at Ye Feng and stabbed him directly in his chest.

"Give me a break!"

Since Ye Feng had Soul Search Technique, he sensed the whereabouts of his opponent instantaneously and then immediately started condensing more Zhenqi in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring and the next moment, he turned around and thrust his golden sword forward.

Bang!

Silver light flashed and Long Wuren's silvery white sword was chopped by him directly into two equal halves, while the sword tip soared high into the sky, then soon after, it fell down heavily and got stuck into the

sand and was thoroughly covered by the heavy rain.

Puff!

However Ye Feng's chest was still being pierced by Long Wuren's semi-broken sword, immediately after Long Wuren's icy-cold inner qi passed through the sword and penetrated his bone marrow.

Fresh blood very quickly incarnadine his chest, this scene immediately made Long Wan'er's heart tight and without thinking much she scolded tenderly, immediately her pretty figure twinkled and she displayed Dragon Leg Technique and kicked on the tip of the broken sword.

Shua!

Her foot broke the tip of the broken sword and it suddenly roared towards Long Wuren.

Since Long Wuren's sword had suddenly been cut off, he was in a state of shock. He thought that his sword was in the rank of the Sharp Weapon category, how could it be so easily cut off? However seeing Long Wan'er's shot, he immediately responded and moved aside to avoid the flying sharp tip.

Upon seeing this, Ye Feng thought to take advantage of his unpreparedness, so while enduring the pain in his chest, he held the sword and stepped forward, instantly the power his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace's second layer erupted and in a flash, delimited Long Wuren's throat!

Puff!

Although Long Wuren succeeded in avoiding the sharp tip of the broken sword, he actually failed to avoid Ye Feng's close fatal blow that happened at a point-blank range. His head was severed from his body by the sword and his obese body tumbled down heavily on the ground and stuck in the already drenched sand, while his eyes were wide open. He never thought of his own inexplicable death and that too in such a way.

"You okay?"

Long Wan'er quickly ran up to him and supported him, simultaneously tried to examine his injury.

Bang!

A startling thunderclap resounded in the vicinity once again.

Not far from the roof, three shadows quietly appeared, led by Long Mo'ran with a terrifying pale complexion. Behind him, in the sky, a lightning flash piercing the sky as if complementing his cold complexion.

“You killed the member of my Clan, now you wait and see what happens to you. Don't even think of leaving here alive!”

Long Mo'ran's angry voice was complemented by the roar of the thunder, casting an ominous shadow on the villagers!



## Chapter 168 - Draws Lightning!

---

Long Mo'ran finally showed up.

Ye Feng clenched his teeth, then, by taking the support of Long Wan'er, he stood up. Immediately after, he raised his head and looked ahead towards the roof where the three shadows had appeared.

Long Mo'ran, Long Zi and Long Qing.

He hadn't thought he would put together his injury to be a bit faster to resolve Long Wuren, or else he didn't have sufficient time to finish him up. Now the situation was far from good, if he wanted to compete fiercely with the opposite party, then his speed should be absolutely no more than Long Mo'ran.

"You killed the member of my Clan, now you wait and see what happens to you. Don't even think of leaving here alive!"

Long Mo'ran's facial expression was dense and firm while his eyes were staring at Ye Feng and Long Wan'er standing together. Besides, his one hand was already on the sword which he had around his waist.

Behind him, Long Qing was there holding a careless appearance, as if all these things had nothing to do with him. However, Long Zi's eyebrows were already tightly locked, making a deep frown as he looked at Ye Feng in a strange way as if he was pondering something.

Right then, Ye Feng suddenly waved his hands gently and his Camouflage quietly dissipated. Still hiding under masks was completely worthless now. Now, wearing a black and white mask Ye Feng and Long Wan'er's true form finally appeared in front of everyone, including villagers.

"What, Wan'er?"

Originally Long Qing, who never cared about anything, was now all of

a sudden hit by a huge shock. They were standing far away, in addition, under the effect of Camouflage Technique, they really couldn't recognize her. However now, they had resumed their original forms, even if wearing a mask, still, anyone from Long Clan could easily recognize her right away.

“Bastard.”

Upon seeing this, Long Mo'ran's complexion turned gloomier. His daughter actually collaborated with the outsider to kill Long Clan's person, this thing made him seethe with extreme anger.

As for Long Wuren, although his importance in the military force was almost negligible, but was actually the bridge between Long Clan and the modern metropolis! This obese man used to plough money abundantly, besides he also had connections with a lot of big influences. Interestingly, Long Clan's huge fund was generally also used to be controlled by him.

Now that he was beheaded like this, how could Long Mo'ran swallow this incident? Even if he killed Ye Feng today, it was still difficult to eliminate the hatred from his heart!

“I'll block him, you leave first.”

Long Wan'er's heart was already panic-stricken on seeing that Ye Feng was actually finally caught by Long Mo'ran and that also red-handed, now would certainly die without any doubt. However now, her staying back to delay sometimes for Ye Feng could only help her in fighting for a little chance of survival for him.

Even if she died at the hands of Long Mo'ran, still she wouldn't have any regrets or complaints, as long as Ye Feng could continue living, could remember her .....

“Fool, I won't abandon you.”

Thunder was bursting repeatedly and the rainstorm was still pouring in torrents, in this backdrop, Ye Feng's wearing a face mask was making his appearance look incomparably terrible. But unfortunately, a broken

sword was still stuck in his chest, as well as his front portion was dyed with red, both of them were together demonstrating that the injury he had received was not that light.

Owing to the last move of Romantic Sword Technique which was displayed by Long Wuren in the end – “Flowers fall, autumn frost,” Ye Feng’s chest meridians were suddenly penetrated by his icy-cold inner qi deeply. And in such a short period of time, he didn’t have the means to handle it.

Grasped.

Ye Feng stretched out his hand out and pulled the broken sword out from his chest, soon the dyed blood washed away and lost in the wet sand. Then he lifted his foot at once and stamped it on Long Wuren’s head heavily, making it deeply stick into the sand pit.

Afterwards, he raised his head and looked towards the roof where Long Mo’ran was.

The weather was getting more and nastier, lightning and thunder were making his heart all prepared as if he was aware of the current situation.

Bang!

He lifted his right hand and the golden sword condensate out, directly pointing at Long Mo’ran : “Then meet my one move, if you can still continue, I’ll surrender without any fight!”

“Ha ha ha ha!”

It seemed as if Long Mo’ran heard a ridiculous joke all of a sudden which forced him to laugh out loud : “The present you are still qualified to discuss the condition with me? However, in case you die before your last request, then I actually can satisfy you.

Seeing his real strength, he was brimming with absolute self-confidence, not to mention a single move, how could even ten moves of the masked man help him achieve his goal?

Since ages, in the martial arts world, such martial arts talent like he

had, had rarely been seen. Even Xu Xiaoyu's 80 years of Cultivation couldn't scare him so far, then how could a young boy wearing a mask scare him?

Today, he would surely not let this masked man escape again, he had already lost his face recently, therefore this time, he must make the opposite party repay!

"You go quickly!"

Long Wan'er saw him in this condition, started burning even more with anxiety and impatience.

"It's nothing, believe me."

Immediately a cold look flashed in his eyes, he gently pushed her to one side and then looked up again towards Long Mo'ran.

Under the lightning and thunder, their confrontation made everyone around hold their breath!

At this moment, Ye Feng felt that the temperature, raindrop, lightning flashes, thunderclap, all were giving him the feeling of the World of the Immortals. In such an extremely adverse condition, many Immortal Cultivators often learnt a deeper layer of Immortal Techniques!

"If I'll use the first layer of icy-blue Dragon Sword qi, its might would be probably ten times greater than the normal slash. But if it is integrated with various nature's energies, it might enter the second layer, then its might will also enhance ten times again ....."

Lava! Cold ice! Hurricane! Lightning!

Every kind of nature's powers could be integrated into it.

Luckily, the rainstorm happened to hit the place today, if he could display Dragon Sword qi by integrating the lightning's strength into it, then defeating Long Mo'ran really wouldn't remain that impossible.

Shua!

The golden sword was again pointed at Long Mo'ran, although the two people were separated by tens of meters distance of confrontation.

Suddenly in this rainstorm, a lightning flashed and collapsed near a house, however, Ye Feng was still proudly standing, while his whole body was drenched by the rainstorm. On the other side, at this moment, Long Wan'er had already tightly gripped her hands, since she was extremely worried and now had almost started trembling a bit.

If Ye Feng died here now then what would she do?

Two talented people just met an evening, now were going to confront with such life and death situation .....

She helplessly stood still in the rain, while the tears, accompanied by the raindrops, were rolling down her cheeks, however, she actually didn't act like this willfully to stop Ye Feng. Deep inside her heart, she still believed that he could beat Long Mo'ran, although this possibility was extremely low .....

This small village was surrounded by the crowd sheltering under eaves, constantly staring at the confrontation of these two people, while secretly regretting that this masked youth, who easily defeated Long Wuren, now his future was doomed for being too impulsive and today he would be certainly killed.

Nobody had thought that he could display a technique to kill Long Mo'ran!

Because presently, in the East China Sea, Long Mo'ran could be said to be the strongest one, no one could dare point his sharp tip at him. If a masked kid could beat him, then wouldn't he lose his self-respect among other martial artists?

At this time, the youth of Taiji Palace, who was just rescued by Ye Feng, carefully observed the situation and secretly clenched his teeth.

While charming and matured beauty, Shu Shu just stood under the eaves, however, a trace of anxiousness could be seen across her face, while her eyes were stuck on Ye Feng . In this situation, a weak woman without any martial arts skill couldn't play any important role to turn the table.

But she still had a hope that Ye Feng would certainly kill Long Mo'ran and then she as well as Long Wan'er would have complete freedom, but again this possibility was on the extremely lower side .....

Clang!

All of a sudden, Ye Feng's stature moved forward, his black clothes fluttered in the air and dispersed a little bit of water. Immediately, he waved his golden sword in midair and formed an ice blue, half-moon shaped Sword qi.

Bang!

Immediately after, the Zhenqi drew a lightning as it dropped from the sky and then instantly integrated with his Sword qi. At this instant, it seemed as if this small and gloomy village was suddenly illuminated by a flash of bright sunlight.

The intensely dazzling light instantly forced everyone around, including Long Mo'ran as well as Ye Feng, subconsciously closed their eyes.

The entire fishing village suddenly lit up with a bright light!

## Chapter 169 - A True Lightning Sword Qi

---

Due to the dazzling light of the lightning, the surrounding people could only see the faint silhouette of a person, even Long Zi and Long Qing find themselves unable to clearly see even Long Mo'ran, who was standing close at hand.

In the entire village, screaming and shouting started rising from all around!

“Lightning Sword qi!”

Ye Feng secretly roared in his heart, simultaneously swept his Soul Search Technique around and felt that his Dragon Sword qi had already integrated with the frightening lightning, hence he immediately loosen his Zhenqi.

Zi Zi Zi!

A lightning flashed for an instant, immediately after, a half-moon-shaped lightning sword light congealed out a true Lightning Sword qi, which was similar to a crazy ferocious viper and swept away as many things as possible toward the roof aiming at Long Mo'ran, while along the way, also set off a gust of strong wind!

The water curtain formed by the rainstorm, all of a sudden also got attached to the Lightning Dragon Sword qi and immediately formed a close vacuum zone.

Now, the people could clearly see the situation on the field finally. Consequently, in succession, alarmed and terrified expression spread on their faces as they saw the Lightning Dragon Sword qi rapidly advancing toward Long Mo'ran.

Anyone could sense the terrifying might of this technique – Sword qi.

This masked man could actually release Sword qi!

As for the true Lightning Sword qi, Ye Feng was really lucky that he could use this technique in this kind of weather, besides his Zhenqi could also draw and make use of nature's energy, naturally, its formidable power would be extraordinary.

Long Mo'ran's eyes contracted since the Lightning Sword qi arrived too fast!

He could dodge it quite easily, but dodging in front of the young generation was highly improper and unacceptable to him, because then how could he show his face? Although he didn't have any idea how the opposite party pulled a lightning, but he had self-confidence that he could still resist this move.

Obviously, he had to use some cheap tricks.

Immediately he stamped his foot heavily, simultaneously threw his both hands towards Shu Shu, who was standing under the eaves and grasped her. Since Shu Shu was away from him recently, consequently became his target.

Actually, he instantly assigned away his inner qi from his body and captured Shu Shu, who didn't have any resistance capability. Then he pulled her close to him, so as to block the quickly advancing Lightning Sword qi on the way.

“Aunt!”

Long Wan'er shouted loudly as she saw everything clearly and turned all alarmed and annoyed at once. Long Mo'ran was too shameless, actually, he used a weak woman as a shield who knew nothing about the martial arts techniques.

Ye Feng's complexion also suddenly changed, since he never thought that Long Mo'ran would turn so vicious and sinister like this!

Since Shu Shu helped his daughter secretly run away, this actually made Long Moran want to kill her, so much that he even handed her over to Long Wuren to defile her chastity. And now surprisingly, again he took hold of her to use her as a shield, simply disgusting.



Now that Shu Shu was suddenly grasped by him, she immediately flew high up in the sky. At this moment, her gentle beautiful eyes were reflecting how rapidly she was getting close to the Lightning Sword qi, making her already panic-stricken.

She already had the plan to die, but such cause of death, she didn't want to accept it. By this incident, not only she would hinder Long Wan'er and Ye Feng's plan, but this way she would also rescue Long Mo'ran at such a critical moment, how did this make her resign herself?

Thud!

Abruptly, an agile and vigorous figure rushed out from one side and all of a sudden pushed Shu Shu away from midair.

That person was actually the recently rescued masked youth from Taiji Palace!

At this critical moment, he jumped out to help Ye Feng to return his favour, however .....

Lightning Sword qi was incredibly fast!

Puff!

In the rainstorm, all of a sudden, the masked youth's thigh was pierced badly by his sword and he heavily fell to the ground. Lightning had really caused severe injuries all over his body, making his whole body convulse.

Actually having sacrificed himself, he tried to save Shu Shu!

True Lightning Sword qi, accompanied with a "Zizi" sound, speedily continued proceeding forward and in an instant, arrived in front of Long Mo'ran's eyes.

Shua Shua!

Romantic Sword Technique!

A dense look all at once appeared on Long Mo'ran's face, without further ado, he waved his long sword and cast out three moves one after another – Sweep away scattered clouds; Flowers fall -autumn frost and Snow Reflecting Sunset!

Three different characteristics of Sword qi instantly condensed out from his sword's tip and greeted Ye Feng's Lightning Sword qi in succession.

Usually, not to mention a youth with a decade of Cultivation, even an old man holding 40-50 years of Cultivation, could be easily beheaded by Long Mo'ran's sword. However now, while confronting this true Lightning Sword qi, he actually wielded three moves at a stretch.

If compared with nature, even the strength of Long Mo'ran was not worthy of mentioning.

Although Ye Feng borrowed a small part of the strength of the lightning, still couldn't reach the extent of going against heaven's will.

Bang, crash, boom!

Three consecutive explosions roared on the roof. When the Lightning Sword qi and Sweep away scattered clouds collided with each other, a strong light erupted again, just like the ordinary bright fireworks.

Every time his Sword qi collided, the explosion distance got even more close to Long Mo'ran, while the last explosion took place less than one meter away, projecting his incomparably pale complexion and simple looking white long gown fluttering in the air.

The frightful wind pressure immediately blew away those three people from the roof.

Long Zi and Long Qing didn't say that they were lifted by the air pressure all of a sudden to fly a while and then heavily fell to the sandy beach. As for Long Mo'ran, since he had already released his inner qi out in the air, therefore his footsteps lightly pointed in the midair and a moment later, he fell to the ground steadily.

“Coughs.....”

However, immediately fresh blood flowed out of his corners of the mouth, the last violent explosion took place very close to him to the extent that it actually made him receive an internal injury. For him, this kind of thing had never happened to him since ages.

On the other side, for Shu Shu, suddenly a masked youth appeared and blocked a blow in the middle, this was really shocking. The Lightning Sword qi really made his body suffer several severe injuries!

After a series of violent explosions, one by one, several houses were blown to pieces. Everything was in a complete disorder, the dust rose from all around and blocked the line of sight of the numerous people.

“Aunt!”

However Long Wan'er didn't wait for the rising dust to dissipate, she ripped off Ye Feng's black coat from his body and immediately ran towards Shu Shu who was pushed to the ground. Then she draped the coat over her plentiful stature so as to help her block the storm.

At this moment, Ye Feng also didn't stay idle, he took advantage of the surrounding chaos and straightaway arrived in front of the injured legs of the youth and cast out an Immortal technique, Holy Cure on him!

A golden light sparkled on his hand and he helped him quickly stop the blood.

“Wan'er, quickly run!”

Ye Feng supported the boy to rise up as he looked at her and hastily said.

“What's wrong, do you want to escape?”

At this instant, Long Moran's dense voice suddenly spread through smoke and dust.

The rainstorm was getting stronger as the time rolled on and it seemed as if it had taken the form of a waterfall in general, making the entire village completely soaked.

The dust raised by the collapse of houses also started quickly precipitating in the rain.

Ye Feng raised his head and glanced towards Long Mo'ran, who had stood up by now and was wiping the blood from the corners of his mouth and soon a serene sneer crawled over his face as he looked at him.

“Still want to lead my daughter to run away, I’d actually like to see that where can you two run to escape from me .....”

His voice sounded very cold and gloomy, which immediately affected the people around and sent a shiver down their spines.

“Don’t call me daughter.”

Long Wan’er raised her head and tossed her mask away. Immediately an elegant pretty face accompanied with a trace of hatred appeared. Then she looked at Long Mo’ran and said : “You are such a person who doesn’t deserve to be a father!

Actually, Long Mo’ran had never been close to her heart since childhood, instead, for her, aunt Shu Shu was the most intimate person. However, just now, her father used Shu Shu as a shield without caring about her life, which finally triggered her anger and made her see the true nature of her father.

Anyway, she couldn’t escape now, besides she also didn’t mind revealing her identity anymore and tore open her face!

Although Shu Shu was just an ordinary person, but no matter what happened, Long Wan’er would always protect her.

Whenever she was bullied by other children for being a child of Long Clan, Shu Shu always stood in front of her, quietly bearing their supercilious and cold stares.

As a child whenever she caused any trouble and got punished, Shu Shu had always stood before her as a shield.

Even not long ago, when she was confined, regardless of anything, only Shu Shu helped her run away secretly.

It could be said that Shu Shu had made her place directly in Long Wan’er’s heart, seemingly equally close to her like a mother!

“Right.”

Holding a very light tone, without any special expression, he said : “I also don’t want you to be my daughter, you just discard your Dantian to

abandon all the martial arts techniques of our Long Clan, then I'll let you leave."

His words sounded very cold to the surrounding people.

However, having heard that he would let them go, a ray of hope suddenly emerged in her heart.

As long as ..... she discarded her Dantian, it would be fine then?

## Chapter 170 - Self-Discarding Dantian

---

Hearing Long Mo'ran speaking out indifferently, all martial artists present on the scene, one by one started talking in whispers.

In the younger generation, Long Wan'er's martial arts talent was splendid. And could be said that once she reached Luo Feng's age, perhaps could comprehend that level in which inner qi was assigned away from the body. She had always been a very talented person in her Clan's younger generation.

However now, Long Mo'ran made her self-discard her Dantian and he was earnest when he said that, still forcing her to make a choice?

As for the matter of Long Clan, obviously the surrounding martial artists were the worldly people, so had long been obtained the news from various sources that masked man "Mo Jiuge" had some connection with Ye Clan's Ye Feng, still he was Long Wan'er's man.

Whether she wanted her Cultivation or a man, Long Mo'ran smartly compelled her to make the choice!

In the martial arts world, it seemed that in case she really threw away her Dantian, then that masked man, "Mo Jiuge," would still want her? Definitely, heartlessly he would abandon her! However if their respective situations were replaced with each other, then, certainly she didn't have to discard her Dantian and would definitely choose to keep Cultivation and stand on the side of Long Mo'ran.

Ye Feng squinted and look toward Long Wan'er.

He didn't utter a single word so far since he also wanted to know what kind of choice she would make in the end. His intuition told him that she would choose to discard her Dantian to fight for these two people's freedom.

If she really abandoned her Dantian, then, it was the right time to let

her know things related to Immortal Cultivation.

“Discarding martial arts Cultivation, it means now there is no need to be worried about the conflict which might take place between her Zhenqi and inner qi.”

Ye Feng’s mind was constantly thinking, because having the back route prepared, there is no need to stop her.

Dantian was considered as both the key to and core of Cultivation for the martial artists. Once it was abandoned, it might cause despair to the martial arts world. However, for the Immortal Cultivation, Dantian was regarded as nothing, because in the World of the Immortals, Core Dan was the core, while Dantian was just a vessel since they didn’t have same Cultivation.

Having Core Dan inside, then Dantian could be regenerated again!

All around the village, lightning flashes, thunder, rainstorm, everything was making people have the painful taste. Besides, the sea was merely one kilometre away, which had now started howling even more than before, accompanied by the tide surging wave upon wave.

Looking at the appearance of the mighty waves overturning the entire village, it seemed that soon, the entire village would be submerged by the tide for sure.

“This time storm .....

Ye Feng was a little restless, because the words left by the NSA captain Thunder before leaving here, were still resounding in his ears.

Could it have any relation to his master? In the world of Immortals, the weather had never been normal, because anyone with even an above average Cultivation talent, could overturn seas and rivers and cause the drastic change in the weather.

So now, could Su Feiying .....

He squatted down next to the unconscious Taiji Palace’s youth, while constantly thinking about such scenario.

Meanwhile, Long Wan'er supported Shu Shu in getting up. At this time, Shu Shu seemed a bit embarrassed, not only she was completely drenched, but also was fully wrapped with sand dust. In addition, it seemed that she had also caught a cold since was coughing constantly.

Her delicate and pitiful appearance, however, aroused the hidden desires of some people around who were staring at her intently, as if wanted to swallow her right away.

“Isn’t that called self-discarding Dantian?”

Long Wan'er supported her Aunt first, then raised her head and looked towards Long Mo'ran holding a perverse look on her face : “You remember the words that you just spoke.”

She raised her chin, the rain water was continuously slipping down her smooth and delicate face. Her supple but drenched beautiful hair was draped over her white shoulders, while her long skirt had stuck close to her body. In this rain, she was looking particularly attractive and together with Shu Shu was constituting a beautiful landscape.

“Coughs ..... Wan'er.”

Shu Shu was constantly coughing, however now she just wanted to urge her : “Considering his degree of tolerance, if you really abandon your Dantian, I am afraid, this would certainly make him fly into a rage out of humiliation, then he would absolutely not let you go .....”

“In front of so many people, the martial arts world’s first sword, Long Mo'ran will certainly not renege on his promise, right?”

Long Wan'er said as she looked towards him, who still had his sword in his hand and then suddenly, a contemptuous smile spread on her face.

“Hmm.”

Long Mo'ran lightly snorted without uttering a single word.

Long Wan'er had finally made up her mind.

In the present scenario, she could only hope that he would abide by the agreement. After discarding her Cultivation as well as Dantian, she



decided to take Shu Shu and Ye Feng along and leave this place.

Seeing her as if had already decided to discard her Dantian, over a hundred of martial artists present in the village then, shook their heads and sighed secretly.

After all, she was still a young girl, too young, ah!

For the sake of a man, sacrificing one's own life, did it worth it? Because the consequences of discarding one's Dantian were extremely serious! Not only her Cultivation would be destroyed in a moment, but also throughout her life she couldn't practice martial arts, even her future physical fitness wouldn't be any better than an ordinary person!

And that masked man "Mo Jiuge", although was so young, but could still release his inner qi out of his body like nothing. In addition, he could also direct the thunder to display the sword qi. Even Long Mo'ran barely withstood his blow. Such an unusual talent he had, so henceforth, could he stay with her "a disabled person" from now on?

Long Wan'er turned her head and looked at Ye Feng.

She just wanted to hear and see whether there was even a little bit of feeling left in Ye Feng's heart to stop her, then, she would feel satisfied and proceed without a bit of hesitation.

However, he didn't notice anything.

Ye Feng's chest was stained with bright red colour, besides his wound was appearing very horrible, it looked like he was very seriously injured. At this moment, he looked towards Long Wan'er, slightly nodded and firmly said :

"No matter what happens, I won't leave you."

Long Wan'er thought for a while to understand what he said, then, clenched her teeth and nodded. Immediately after, she ran thirty-two steps forward and stopped in the middle of Long Mo'ran and Ye Feng.

It was certain that if she didn't make her choice right now, then they all would certainly die. So might as well, she should fight for their freedom.

Even if she discarded her Dantian and lost her Cultivation completely ..... still as long as Ye Feng stood by her side, the future days wouldn't be too miserable, right?

Besides, she firmly believed that Ye Feng would certainly not throw her down no matter what.

A thunder roared loudly, at this moment, Long Wan'er was away from the water curtain, staring at her father fixedly. She wanted to capture this scene today and firmly engrave it deep inside her heart!

Long Mo'ran also looked at her but holding a cold look, as if the girl standing in front of him wasn't his daughter but a stranger. In addition, at this moment, the surrounding martial artists held their breath, all prepared to even get drenched in this rainstorm but still continue witnessing the impending scene with their own eyes.

No matter what kind of choice she would make, that would surely set off a burst of mighty waves in the entire martial arts world.

Gradually Long Wan'er started condensing her Inner qi, simultaneously her meridians also started revolving. Afterwards, inner qi advanced towards her lower abdomen and gathered in her Dantian. Self-discarding Dantian was a very simple process, all she had to do was gather all her inner qi in the Dantian and then detonate it.

Ye Feng was also all prepared in his heart to display Dragon Claw Hand Technique any moment and pull her to his side. Although he didn't come out to stop her for various reasons, but his heart was actually extremely anxious.

The current situation was like even a slight negligence would be beyond redemption!

“Puff –”

She lightly groaned, soon from head to toe, she started shaking and spouted fresh blood from her mouth.

Her adorable face all of a sudden turned pale, accompanied with her apathetic facial expression. In this downpour, her body was on the verge

of collapse.

“She really discarded her Dantian!”

The surrounding martial artists were all shocked!

In the beginning, they all thought that she would never arrive at this determination. However looking back now, it seemed that they really very much underestimated this young girl. Now the point was what could be the reason behind her choosing this option with such a determination?

For love?

Bullshit, who still believed in love nowadays!

Long Mo’ran saw that and suddenly his complexion sank, while blue veins immediately popped up on his forehead.

# Chapter 171 - The Body Of Immortal Arteries, Open Up!

---

Bang!

A violent thunder roared.

Near the eastern coast, the storm was getting more and more violent along with the lightning, which was flashing continuously in the sky. One kilometre away from the sea, the first wave of the dreadful sea waves finally set off and flooded in, close to the sandy beach of the small fishing village.

Perhaps, soon the mighty waves would entirely submerge this small village!

When the act of Long Wan'er discarding her Dantian came into sight, suddenly a blue vein stuck out from Long Mo'ran's forehead and once again he tightened his grip on his long sword.

How couldn't he think before that she could really abandon her Dantian and that also for the sake of this masked guy? Hateful, too abhorrent!

Shua!

Immediately, he pointed his sword directly at her and while holding a gloomy tone, said : "Very well then, your success had enraged me, you all four people, don't even think of leaving here alive today!"

He swept his cold and dense eyes over Long Wan'er, Ye Feng, Shu Shu and the collapsed masked youth, one by one.

After spitting out a mouthful of fresh blood, Long Wan'er's delicate body had already weakened and now also started crumbling. In addition, her complexion also suddenly turned pale as she listened to these words of her father.

Long Mo'ran had really reneged on his promise!

When he raised his sword, a cold look peeped out from behind his face in this heavy rain, making everyone around including all martial artists hit by a sudden bad feeling.

Looking at his this temperament, everyone felt that he really was extremely annoyed and if they continue staying there continuously staring at them, then they might suffer severe consequences as being an innocent bystander! In addition, constantly increasingly violent waves were hitting the shore nearby the beach continuously and it seemed that they would soon engulf the whole village, indirectly forcing them to set a firm resolve.

Must leave this place!

Because, even a huge bustling excitement, could never be compared with their own precious lives.

Immediately, some people ran fast to go outside the village and soon their stature twinkled and disappeared. Then after, one after another, everyone present in the village started departing gradually.

“He really reneged on his promise?”

Ye Feng snorted lightly as he had already correctly guessed this act of Long Mo'ran before, so this act didn't panic him a bit. The time when Long Mo'ran forced his daughter to self-discard her Dantian, simultaneously he also had made the worst plan. Even if the opposite party went back from his words, similarly he also had a surefire plan to escape from here.

Under the rainstorm, wearing a black grimace face mask, his stature appeared incredibly calm, at the same time, formed a striking contrast with the other martial artists, who by now panicked and immediately started fleeing from the village.

Snapped!

All of a sudden his stature moved and he cast out Dragon Claw Hand Technique towards Long Wan'er and softly grabbed her and drew her

gently towards his side, close to him.

Her completely soaked and weak body couldn't withstand it and was immediately pulled back by him and then was wrapped by his arms.

At this moment, she opened her beautiful eyes but didn't have the strength left to make any movement. Now she had completely become an ordinary person, even weaker than any average person as if had a serious illness.

She leant against his bosom, without looking at her father even once. Then she raised her face and stretched out her hand since she wanted to cast off his face mask.

Anyway, Long Mo'ran had reneged on his promise, that meant they were going to die any moment, but before that happened, she wanted to look at Ye Feng's face and engrave it deep inside her heart .....

“Don't worry, just leave everything to me.”

Ye Feng said softly. Then all of a sudden, his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring lit up brightly. Even in this torrential downpour, this beam of bright light looked especially glorious and very eye catching.

A faint trace of mysterious airflow gradually flowed out from his Ring and entered directly into Long Wan'er's body. This Ring once again played a very important role for him.

Now, within her body, it gradually started congealing out Core Dan!

Her beautiful eyes opened up as soon as she felt a sudden change taking place within her body. Holding some doubts and some strain, her hand gently touched Ye Feng's mask and caressed his masked cheek, however, couldn't lift open his mask.

Just now, because of self-discarding her Dantian, her body had suffered enormous damage, making her unable to hold on anymore and soon her beautiful eyes closed and she lost her consciousness.

In this sweet torrential downpour, her long, slender and white hand powerlessly slid down, but a happy smile was still hanging on her

adorable face.

Ye Feng put out his hand and tightly gripped her hand, suddenly a look of determination flashed on his face under the mask. This girl discarded her Dantian and gave up her Cultivation just for the sake of him, so now he didn't have any hesitation left.

In his lifetime, no matter how the future would be henceforth, even if extreme dangers or hellish difficulties, still he wanted to take her along and walk through them together!

Under the effect of mysterious airflow of Ancient Dragon Sword Ring, finally a complete Core Dan was congealed out within her body and this way, she moved one step closer to step into the world of Immortal Cultivators.

“Die!”

Long Mo'ran's complexion was still dense, however, at this instant, his sword again flung and his footsteps made a long-range raid towards them lightly, making his simple white and long gown flutter in the storm.

In this torrential downpour, he and his sword were in great synchronisation as if they were one and were rapidly approaching Long Wan'er and Ye Feng in order to stab them straight away!

Shu Shu knew that the situation was extremely bad, but actually, she couldn't do anything. Besides, in this downpour, her line of sight was also totally disrupted, so all she could do was just to watch helplessly a blurred figure approaching them, at a lightning fast speed.

Long Mo'ran's sword was getting closer to them, wearing an icy-cold brightness along with it!

One hundred meters.

Eighty meters.

Fifty meters!

“It's finally the time, the body of immortal arteries, open up!”

Ye Feng roared loudly in his heart and instantly condensed his remaining Zhenqi, though it wasn't much left in his body. Afterwards, in an instant, he transported it into the seven hidden acupuncture points present within her body. Her body, which had stored almost two decades of spiritual energy, suddenly got activated and just like how a tide generally rose, similarly, it rushed forth to enter the middle part of her Core Dan.

Zi Zi Zi!

Her body's meridians soon started brimming with the Zhenqi produced by the transformation of her Core Dan, resulting in a dramatic change which might soon arouse the resonance of the surrounding nature!

Zhenqi was originally the bridge that used to connect an Immortal Cultivator with the outside world.

When the body of immortal arteries was carrying out Open Hole Process, it needed more and more intense spiritual energy, which could definitely trigger nature's resonance and in such a thunderstorm weather, the effect was even more obvious.

As the spiritual energy condensed, the manic air flow suddenly burst out from her body!

Seeing this, Long Mo'ran all at once turned pale with a big shock.

What kind of terrifying energy it was, actually it was so violent? Moreover, she discarded her Dantian just a few moment ago, so how could she still have such a formidable strength left in her body?

Long Mo'ran's complexion turned even denser than ever. Today, he must get rid of all these people, or else it would become hard to erase the hatred he had in his heart!

His graceful stature wrapped in a white gown flashed in the rain and instantly arrived in front of those two people.

At this moment, he condensed his whole body's inner qi in the tip of his sword and flung it, which instantly produced a sword qi out of the blue and it advanced toward Long Wan'er to stab her in the chest. This



sword was good enough to penetrate her heart, making her unable to survive even for a single moment!

However, when he was about to succeed, right then, a circle of strong whirlpool energy burst out from her body, making the wild and fierce airflow immediately unify together with a powerful and vertical hurricane tornado, on the top of her head!

Scoffs!

A violent lightning flashed and declined from the horizon and instantly merged with the hurricane tornado and changed the countenance of the world at once!

Finally started, the spiritual energy which was condensed within Long Wan'er's body, started to resonate with the nature, however, such eruption of resonance would continuously arise seven times in a row!

As a result, the attack of Long Mo'ran's sword tip was immediately blown away by the hurricane tornado, even his Sword qi failed to move forward even a half inch.

“Go to hell!”

Relying on his more than 50 years of Cultivation, he wanted to force a breakthrough, so he wielded his sword again towards her to chop her down, holding a very gloomy expression on his face just like a devil.

The next moment, a Hurricane Tornado broke out once again!

But Long Mo'ran wasn't the slightest bit prepared for it, hence in a flash, the violent hurricane tornado rolled him up into it along with his sword and then threw both of them together to the high altitude!

## Chapter 172 - Retribution

---

If it wasn't for such weather, Long Wan'er's body containing immortal arteries wouldn't have shown such a terrific effect after its activation. However now, the storm had turned very violent while the spiritual energy also shook off the fetters and had produced an extremely strong resonance all of a sudden.

In the world, the power of nature was the most fearful one, even a formidable Immortal Cultivator couldn't dare easily raise his weapon against it, not to mention Long Mo'ran.

Once he approached close to Long Wan'er, immediately was drawn into the hurricane tornado and then the whole person was rolled up and thrown high into the sky. The white gown figure, such as candles in the wind, quickly disappeared without leaving any trace.

Under the cover of spiritual energy, the tornado which arose from the centre of Long Wan'er's body, finally calmed down, making her long skirt float in the air gently, just like a fairy!

Although she was in an unconscious state, still was constantly transforming the spiritual energy into Zhenqi within her body, to promote her cultivation.

A burst after burst, several eruptions spread from her body, altogether seven times in succession and it happened to just correspond to her seven hidden accupunture points present within her body. Each time one of her accupunture points was unlocked, it caused a hurricane with a more extended circle on top of her head.

Ye Feng had foreknowledge, carrying Taiji Palace's uncouncious masked youth along with completely drenched and shivering Shu Shu, he left the small fishing village immediately and ran one kilometre outside the village in the woods.

Seeing that the situation was far from good, other martial artists also scattered in all directions to flee!

“What’s the matter?”

Both middle-aged men of God Fist Gate, who had 40 years of Cultivation, didn’t notice anything until this time. But when they realized the situation was extremely bad, one of them immediately rushed out of the house.

Originally, they were personally guarding Luo Feng’s security, even if there was a little sound or movement outside, they still didn’t dare to leave him arbitrarily. However now, the noise caused by the hurricane was noticeably loud, along with the tides rising wave after wave, making both of them feel surprised and alarmed.

Therefore one of them went outside the house, but instantly noticed the edge of the hurricane tornado right against his face. He didn’t have enough time to respond and was drawn completely into it.

“Ah—”

Panic-stricken, he shouted loudly, but soon disappeared, his stature was instantly carried away to somewhere.

“What’s going on?”

Another person heard him yelling and felt a cold shiver in his heart. Promptly, he ran to the second floor’s window and looked outside, however shockingly he saw a vertical tornado soaring in the sky, rapidly approaching, making him totally unable to react and was thunderstruck on the spot.

What was this?!

It wasn’t strange having a tornado in such weather, but even if there was a tornado, it shouldn’t emerge in this small fishing village, it was quite shocking.

He quickly collected his mind, then looked toward the central part of the village, where he actually saw a young girl wearing a long skirt, was

quietly floating in the midair, connecting the mighty hurricane tornado, as if it was centered on her and was continuously spreading.

Bang!

Just when he was in a shocked state, a sound of gunfire rang.

“Not good!”

His heart skipped a beat, immediately he turned around, but instantaneously his facial expression turned pale.

Actually what he saw was already unconscious Luo Feng was almost roasted to the coke, the fresh blood was also gurgling out of his temple at this moment. Actually, someone took advantage of the opportunity to open fire at him, making him fall into the lap of death again.

Who was it!

Luo Feng died, as a personal guard, it was absolutely difficult for him to run away from this blame. Now, even if he returned to God Fist Gate, he was bound to face a severe punishment.

However before he could respond, the hurricane tornado broke out once again and spread about half the size of this small village. The intense wind pressure blew away the house he was in, even the trees were uprooted and rolled up to high altitude!

“Ah—”

Panic-stricken, that man screamed out loud just like how his partner did before and then was also thrown into the sky.

All those martial artists, who couldn't escape from the village by now, were soon caught in the hurricane just like those two men. Along with various bricks, rooftiles, plants, sand and junk items, they also started dancing within the tornado.

The lightning and thunder were still going on, the weather near this small village was constantly getting worse. However, in this chaos, the NSA's Thunder had some people already assigned to carry out the evacuation of villagers. Indeed it was a very right choice he made, or else

the people's death and casualties were hard to count on fingers.

A sort of judgement day scene!

A long time, after a series of seven violent eruptions, the hurricane tornado gradually dissipated, leaving behind the entire village in complete disorder. At this moment, trapped in the hurricane, Long Mo'ran waited for his people who had completely disappeared, meanwhile also noticed that there were several houses which had completely collapsed.

Moreover, Ye Feng also waited for a moment, then immediately took a stride and went to the field. There he gave support to Long Wan'er and hugged her in his bosom.

“Nan Fang!”

At this instant, he proliferated his Soul Search Technique and found that actually under a collapsed house, Nan Fang was buried, which made him somewhat dumbfounded.

This guy was indeed quite tactful, while the village was trapped in a chaotic situation, he took advantage of this confusion and quietly sneaked into the house to grab an opportunity and fire a shot to kill Luo Feng, retribution! But unfortunately, he didn't get time to escape and was pressed under the collapsed house.

However, there still remained a last trace of Zhenqi in Ye Feng's body, so at this time, he again stirred it up and congealed out the golden Zhenqi sword, so that he could use it to cut the stone into pieces under which Nan Fang was suppressed.

“Ha, ha ha ha!”

Even though he was badly crushed under a huge stone and was spitting out blood, he was still laughing out loud after getting rescued.

Finally, he was all relaxed, not only he took revenge, but also removed his Clan's unwanted scum personally!

Father, mother, younger sister, younger brother .....

Are you all right over there?

In this torrential rain, Nan Fang laughed his heart out since he couldn't control his overflowing happiness. However, along with a smile, there were also two lines of tears rolling down his face. Gone people could never come back, even though he had avenged today, still, he had no way to see his family members again.

“Leave here quickly.”

Ye Feng could clearly understand his current feelings, however now was not a good time to express his emotion. Therefore, he kicked him so as to kick him out of his memories and regrets : “You should be hiding in the magic array, currently our state is not good, running into an enemy again would be the worst encounter now.”

“Ok.....”

Nan Fang recovered at once and felt that whatever Ye Feng said was right.

Shu Shu, wearing Ye Feng's black jacket, quickly ran over to have a look at Long Wan'er who was still unconscious, and then anxiously asked: “How is she?”

“She is all right.

Ye Feng said gently to comfort her: “We first find a place to hide.

After saying that, he looked at the masked youth of the Taiji Palace who was not very far away.

“I'm going to take him along with me, walk quickly.”

Nan Fang stepped forward to support that unconscious boy, then he looked back and saw around the distant seaside, there was a huge group of people who were running everywhere since they knew that they had to immediately leave this place.

In this stormy weather, people's vision had been reduced several times, visibility was extremely low! However, it didn't have any affect on Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique's sensation.

“That white bearded old man of God Fist Gate's has come back.”

Ye Feng's heart felt a cold shiver, he immediately held Long Wan'er from her waist to pick her up and then along with the people, he left that village.

.....

"Nandou God Fist", Xu Xiaoyu was burning with fury right now.

He went out to seek for the masked man, however actually he didn't find any figure, how could this make him satisfied? Such a talented man Luo Feng was, but he was thrown into this condition. If he didn't take revenge from his enemy, then how could he maintain God Fist Gate's prestige from now on!

Leading the people, he returned to the village finally, but even from far away, he could see the situation in the village didn't seem quite right.

When they arrived outside the village, they saw the whole village was upside down, which blown away their minds and they were glued to the spot in astonishment, while their jaws dropped. It was truly unbelievable, what would have happened here?

Bang.

A figure suddenly fell from the sky, directly in front of Xu Xiaoyu.

Xu Xiaoyu lowered his head and instantly his blue veins popped out on his forehead, wasn't that Luo Feng? Moreover, his temple also had a muzzle, what was all this about? Didn't he assign two guards to protect him personally, then how could such a thing happen?

The surrounding lightning, thunder, rainstorm, all were constantly rising, even the mighty sea waves were getting more and more dangerous now.

Perhaps because of the hurricane tornadoes, finally, a burst of around ten meters high tsunami rolled up towards the coastal region of the small fishing village to engulf everything .....

## Chapter 173 - Head Of The Clan Returns Alive

---

The East China Sea coast soon set off the monstrous and mighty sea waves everywhere. Consequently, several small island reefs were suddenly submerged in it, while the already destroyed small fishing village also welcomed the tsunami with its open hands. Simultaneously, the entire coastline also rose a few meters up and became a vast body of seawater, full of mighty waves, surging continuously.

Xu Xiaoyu, along with the people of God Fist Gate, quickly left the coast while carrying Luo Feng's corpse along.

Towards the northern side of the village, several martial artists gathered there in the woods. While looking at the raging waves sweeping outside the woods, they started talking in whispers about the incident which happened just now in the village and which was really extremely mind-baffling.

How could Long Wan'er actually trigger that kind of hurricane tornado, which even engulfed Long Mo'ran and carried him away somewhere without leaving any trace?

Moreover, as for the masked man, while facing Long Mo'ran, didn't he have any fear?

Long Mo'ran's personality was already publicly known for being indifferent, so there was nobody who could dare talk about it much. However his strength was also similarly recognized and was already considered as the most formidable figure in the entire martial arts world.

But even so, that masked man wasn't the slightest bit afraid of him. Wasn't it really strange?

Everyone looked around, but neither could find Ye Feng's figure nor could his people, this thing made him appear even more mysterious.

"Returning to the county in such monstrous waves, besides, without



having 40-50 years of Cultivation, still thinking of going to the sea means purely courting death.”

“But tonight the big Coral King is .....

“Nonsense, you want your small life or this big Coral King? Roll back with me.”

Continuously similar conversation was going on among the martial artists while looking at the constantly rising coastline and it was true to have this feeling of being “powerless and incompetent” .....

“After all, where was Long Mo’ran carried away?”

When Xu Xiaoyu heard these rumours, his mood was finally lifted up. He thought that it was the best thing happened ever and that was Long Mo’ran was finally killed, because God Fist Gate wasn’t on good terms with him.

Unfortunately, his thought didn’t become a reality.

“The head of our Clan has come back, he is right there!”

Among the Long people, Long Qing had very sharp eyes, he quickly noticed him and pointed at him who was not far away from the sea shore.

Long Zi accordingly also gazed towards the pointed direction and really saw a white gown silhouette, swimming all the way from the sea and was about to approach the shore finally, wasn’t that Long Mo’ran?

A group of people ran hastily to support him.

The head of the Clan had returned alive!

This was kind of a good news for them since they had also started thinking that in case Long Mo’ran died like this, then, what would they do. However, fortunately, even after getting badly drawn into that dreadful hurricane tornado and then after being thrown to such high-altitude, he still survived, such a powerful person he was.

Long Zi and Long Qing supported him and finally brought him back to the shore. However, he was in an exhausted state, accompanied with a

huge embarrassment which was clearly visible on his face. In addition, his body was completely soaked, hair was all messy and shockingly, his sword had also disappeared from his scabbard, which was hanging around his waist!

“Head, your sword?”

Long Zi’s complexion immediately changed, Long Mo’ran’s sword was regarded as the top grade in sharp weapon’s category. Moreover, it wasn’t only belonged to the superior level in Long Clan, but was also treated as a symbol of status!

“Hmm.”

Long Mo’ran’s dense face which was completely covered in water droplets, exposed a look of unforgettable hatred. However now, to avoid this embarrassing situation, he waved : “All return, start the preparation to grab the big Coral King tonight!”

“Head, such a big storm .....

Long Zi somewhat hesitated, this kind of catastrophic situation was there, still, he was wanted to return and grab the big Coral King. Then in that case, perhaps, lots of Long people would die facing this disaster!

Confronting this sort of natural disaster, even the martial artist were totally powerless.

“I am the head of the Clan or you are?”

Long Mo’ran snorted coldly, then, floated away.

Long Zi shook his head since he saw himself standing in a very helpless position. However, he was forced to give up. Leading his Clan’s people, he immediately followed him.

In such a heart-chilling storm, Long Mo’ran wanted to sneak into the seabed and snatch away the big Coral King. Only those martial artists who had over fifty years of formidable Cultivation and at the same time were well prepared, could only think of returning safely.

And among the entire Long people present over there right now, apart

from Long Mo'ran, there were just two more such elders who had such level of Cultivation. However, the people of God Fist Gate, Tang Clan, Heavenly Sword Palace and other martial arts school also had soaring Cultivation and were extraordinary warriors as well.

“It seems the intention of our Clan's head is to deploy the rest of us to constrain the other strong parties .....

Long Zi thought about this and felt a little discomfort in his heart. As the matter stood, this thing would surely cause lots of sacrifices. If he really wanted to plunder the big Coral King, then, then in that case, if the ordinary martial artists of Long Clan stood with their ordinary weapons, against the martial arts experts in order to block them, how could those experts show mercy on them?

However there was no way out, Long Mo'ran still held the position of the Clan's head, therefore, Long Zi had to listen to his words at all cost.

...

At this moment, on the other side, Hummer H2, which had started from Yanjing, once again broke down on the road.

“After all, what's the matter with this car? Why isn't it getting started?”

Inside the car, Ye Wentian was all flustered and exasperated. Under normal circumstances, he would have already reached the East China Sea by now, however, he took the car, which made him still stuck in the halfway!

“Grandpa, don't be anxious.”

Although Su Menghan repeatedly comforted him, but actually, she was smiling proudly in her heart. This way, she should be able to get some more time for Ye Feng to carry out his work in the East China Sea freely, right?

“I'm not anxious.”

Ye Wentian started fuming with anger : “Little girl, you did this deliberately, didn't you?”

“And how is that?”

Su Menghan immediately put on a look of suffering from injustice and being miserable on her pretty face.

He saw that and all of a sudden became depressed and completely speechless. While facing his own granddaughter-in-law, he really couldn't vent his temper at all!

.....

Similarly, at this time, on the third side, away from Xiangshan County, outside the nearest airport, Xiao Yue, wearing a red skirt, was sitting in a Red Olympic-styled sports car, while her beautiful black eyebrows were tightly wrinkled.

She couldn't think why her younger sister Xiao Qi, who had casually inquired about the whereabouts of the masked man, would actually book a flight ticket early in the morning, to fly over there immediately.

“It's not good, I must not let Xiao Qi contact him again.”

By now, Xiao Yue's heart had taken a decision, throughout her life she had always very much despised those men who straddle the fence.

Her gorgeous eyes glanced at nearby parked a silver Mercedes-SLS AMG sports car. Even though Shanghai City was an international metropolis, but still this car appeared a very eye-catching model there. And now it's being here was, even more, attracting people's attention.

The person sitting in that car was Wang Shaodong.

Wearing sunglasses, Wang Shaodong threw a smile at Xiao Yue. Actually, he was somewhat enjoying the people's shocking vision outside the airport.

“Hey, handsome.”

While departing from the airport, two very fashionable women, having top-notch charm and looks, greeted Wang Shaodong. On looking at their appearance, it seemed that apparently, both ladies wanted to hook up with him.

Unfortunately, he still wanted to get his hands on Xiao Yue, so he couldn't accept their greeting, thus he completely ignored them.

Those two women turned their eyes and looked at Xiao Yue sitting in a red Audi car nearby. Her matured appearance, as well as her pretty face without makeup all of a sudden made them feel inferior to her and they hastily departed.

Although they were not ugly, even in this crowd, they were really attracting people's attention. However, if compared with Xiao Yue, the disparity between them was noticeably enormous.

Wang Shaodong wanted to win over Xiao Yue and he had the valid reason for this. Since he knew that she wasn't the kind who used to rely on make-up, to disguise herself as a beautiful woman.

"Xiao Qi and Lin Shiqing want to come over, it seems that the identity of that masked man is really very susceptible."

Actually, she didn't care about the outside situation, rather while holding her soft cheeks, she tightly wrinkled her eyebrows and indulged herself in a deep thinking mode.

Obviously, she knew Lin Shiqing but hadn't seen her for a long time.

Suddenly, she turned a little curious, when Wang Shaodong would see Lin Shiqing, the first beauty of Yanjing, who knew what kind of expression he would have then? Certainly, she would have a glance to see his expression. However, what a pity, Lin Shiqing was such a woman, who couldn't be seduced by a young guy of Shanghai like him. She hoped that quite soon, he would know himself a bit more.....

## Chapter 174 - Iceberg Islands

---

Approaching noon, a group of five people consisting Ye Feng holding Long Wan'er, along with Shu Shu, Nan Fang and the unconscious masked youth, was moving ahead, bravely facing the rainstorm to arrive at Xiangshan County, a southern village.

As for Ye Wentian and Lin Shiqing's soon arrival there, Ye Feng didn't know anything about it so far.

"This place is around more than ten kilometres away from the coastline and it seemed that perhaps the villagers have been already evacuated."

While stepping into the village, Ye Feng felt a strange silence, so he immediately proliferated his Soul Search Technique and sensed that within a radar of hundred meters of range, there wasn't even a shadow of a single person.

"It seems that this storm is really unusual, perhaps now, only the NSA people exactly know the current situation.

Nan Fang said in a lower voice.

"Hmm, let's first take a rest."

Ye Feng nodded, again he swept around and found a relatively clean building nearby, then made them advance towards it.

Since they took the advantage of the tsunami at that time or else they could never get here. Now these five people must hide from the rain and take a rest therapy.

These five people's condition couldn't be considered well.

Ye Feng was stabbed by a sword directly in the chest, that one move used by Long Wuren 'Flowers fall, autumn frost', made his chest's meridians completely freeze. So, if he didn't hurriedly take a rest therapy, most likely, it would leave behind a residual effect.

As for Long Wan'er, she just went through the process of self-discarding Dantian. Although she had already condensed the Core Dan within her body and had become an Immortal Cultivator now, but actually was still weak and stupor, definitely cannot continue to be drenched.

And that Taiji Palace's masked youth, since his thigh was pierced by Ye Feng's Real Thunder Sword qi, hence he lost his consciousness straightaway. He was now the most serious one among them. Besides, he rescued Shu Shu's life at such a crucial moment, naturally, Ye Feng could never throw him down no matter what.

Nan Fang was originally all right, but during the assassination of Luo Feng, he was actually pressed under a collapsed house, which caused a hemothorax in his chest, because of which he was suffering from a little shortness of breath.

Regarding Shu Shu, she had always been a feeble woman, since now she was in a dripping wet state, therefore she finally caught a cold and fever, along with a frequent cough.

They continued entering the house in succession to avoid the rainstorm.

"Everyone, find your own room and take rest."

Ye Feng continued : "Nan Fang, you take care of this guy, awhile later, I see him again.

However these words left Nan Fang a bit puzzled, Ye Feng could take rest while holding Long Wan'er in his arms, however, he had to take care of an unconscious boy while resting .....

"Wait a minute, Mo Jiuge ....."

At this moment, Shu Shu suddenly opened her mouth wearing a bit troubled look. She thought that presently everyone was like a huge burden on him, therefore, she wanted to try her best to help the crowd in dealing with their wounds.

In Long Clan, she was often responsible for such things, like preparing

medicinal herbs, dressing, healing and so on, she was relatively an expert in this field.

“Call me Ye Feng.”

Ye Feng removed his face mask and threw a smile at her : “Aunt, you take care of your own first.”

Shu Shu and Nan Fang saw that he took off his mask and a very handsome face appeared before them immediately, which left them surprised for a moment.

Ye Feng!

Now Ye Feng had really started trusting Nan Fang along with Shu Shu, hence no longer concealed his identity.

“Now you people can feel relieved and rest peacefully, if there will be any danger, I’ll alert you right away.”

After finished saying, he turned around and went upstairs still embracing Long Wan’er.

There were several rooms in the building, along with several bathrooms, however, bedrooms were relatively few. Nan Fang and Shu Shu soon found their own rooms. Then after trying a bit, they also found that there was still hot water .....

Ye Feng also got a room, he went inside it and locked the door. There was no hurry to treat his wounds immediately, hence he decided to look after Long Wan’er first.

They already had a very intimate relationship, so naturally, they didn’t need to mind it too much.

Keeping aside the distracting thoughts, he stripped her down to clean her body. After that, he went to the bathroom to look for a clean towel, then wiped and dried her snow white and tender body. Finally, he gently put her down on the bed and covered her with a quilt.

Subsequently, he threw their wet clothes into the washing machine, so as to dry them first before anything.



Thereafter, he went to the bathroom again, to begin his rest therapy.

Just a battle had entirely drained away his whole body's Zhenqi. If he didn't rest a bit now to restore his Zhenqi, then he couldn't cast out Holy Cure Technique.....

The rainstorm still continued, there were still numerous martial artists continuously running back from the beach. However, radically, nobody could notice that there were still some people taking shelter in the village. In any case, these five people continued resting and started recovering gradually.

.....

On the sea surface of the East China Sea, the storm was continuously getting stronger.

Two military helicopters, from a distance, were circling around the storm. Thunder was sitting in one of them, carrying a telescope, continuously surveying the scene around the surface of the East China Sea.

According to the report of Special Meteorological Observatory, the area nearby sea would suffer a sudden abnormal weather, which aroused the attention of the NSA. Since Li Feng was in a seriously injured state, so all the matters concerned with the East China Sea were taken over by Thunder, coordinating with the higher authorities to carry out an investigation.

“Captain, the meteorological observatory has transmitted the latest image.”

Next to Thunder, a fully armed adjutant lifted the image receiver in his hand and displayed it to Thunder.

Thunder immediately put down his telescope, then holding a solemn expression, he slightly frowned and lowered his head to look at it.

That was a weather chart, places which were only 20 nautical miles away from the sea coast, had a white and shiny strange big piece. Moreover, it had a kind of mystical strength which cut off the detection of

meteorological satellites.

“What is that?”

Thunder tightly wrinkled his eyebrows, forming a huge frown and then immediately ordered the helicopter to change the direction at once, by carefully avoiding the intensive areas of the thunder clouds, while constantly keeping watch at the direction of the wind and its speed.

Two helicopters respectively from two directions flew towards the white region shown in the weather chart. But since, the sky was very cloudy, so in this bad weather, operating helicopters meant absolutely risking their lives.

However, the NSA had always been in the action, by continuously dealing with the God of death. Besides, they had experienced several severely dangerous circumstances, which was much riskier than the current one, but they never shrunk back.

At this time, only the NSA people were in action nearby the seacoast. Besides them, a huge number of martial artists having profound Cultivation, were also there in order to rob the big Coral King. While the rest of the people were evacuated by the NSA in the morning so as to ensure the minimum casualties.

Two helicopters were howling over the sea, gradually getting close to the destination.

The more they were getting closer to the white area, the fiercer the lightning storm was turning accordingly, causing more difficulty for the helicopters to get close to the destination.

“Ahead, there is a turbulent flow, we must change the direction!”

The pilot’s voice passed on.

“Wait a second, move ahead a bit more!”

Actually, suddenly he found something, therefore, he immediately adjusted the focus of his precision telescope to see the clearer picture of the scene, even far from the sea.

Actually, a group of iceberg islands surprisingly emerged out of thin air on the sea surface!

No, it didn't emerge out of thin air, rather there was some kind of ultra-low temperature, which had converted the water near the sea into a huge piece of ice, eventually forming such huge iceberg islands. The sky over these iceberg islands was covered up with the mysterious energy, which was around the size of the whole island. Probably the size of this white area was still slowly expanding in the meteorological observatory.

“God, what kind of strength does this thing want to achieve?”

Thunderstruck, Thunder shouted out loud!

“Captain, can it be related with the East China Sea's fairy which was rumoured in the martial arts world?”

His adjutant similarly tightly wrinkled his eyebrows and made a conjecture.

“Temporarily, I still don't know.”

Then he immediately ordered wearing a solemn expression: “Helicopters will return first, then, quickly arrange a yacht, we'll attempt to register from the sea!”

Presently, the environment around the East China Sea's surface, especially in those areas which were closer to this island, was extremely bad. Hearing the howling from the central part, it seemed that there must be the 16<sup>th</sup> level typhoon. Still carrying out an investigation in such a dangerous weather certainly involved an enormous risk.

However, not advancing there was out of the question for the NSA. Because, if by any chance, this iceberg island expanded much more than expected, then, only God would know what would be its consequences!

After a perfect preparation, the most equipped squad of the NSA took the specially-made speed boat from the seashore and proceeded towards the mystical iceberg islands, penetrating through the storm .....

## Chapter 175 - Imparting Immortal Techniques

---

Time rolled on, Ye Feng rested for more than two hours and finally restored almost more than half of his Zhenqi in his Dantian. Afterwards, he immediately cast Holy Cure Technique on his chest to cure the injury caused by the sword.

The second layer of Romantic Sword Technique – Flowers fall, autumn frost, could make a person's meridians immediately frost, surprisingly its effect was also pretty good, even Ye Feng was forced to spend some time to recover.

If he didn't guess wrong, then the third layer of this sword technique would certainly have a much more intense freezing effect. After all, "Frost" word was used in its name, but unfortunately, Ye Feng hadn't yet experienced it.

"Considering Long Mo'ran's Cultivation, Ye Feng feared that he couldn't die that easily. In that case, he might come to compete for the big Coral King today in the evening, perhaps once again ....."

He thought in his heart that he should wait till the evening to set out again. However, before that, he must do a good preparation first, to ensure his safety.

Suddenly his Soul Search Technique detected something and he felt that unconscious Long Wan'er finally woke up.

Consequently, he got up and immediately ran towards her, where he noticed that her both eyes were open. now However she was still hiding under a quilt, probably she was in a shocked state and was like completely unable to understand what the current situation was.

Wasn't she in the small fishing village when she had discarded her Dantian? Long Mo'ran reneged on his promise, so didn't he kill them all? Then why was she lying here like this in such a room?

She could clearly feel that the meridians within her body were flowing with a very strange force and her former practised inner qi seemed to be a bit different now. However this strange strength wasn't running according to a certain specified line, instead, it was following a chaotic way, aimlessly flowing in her meridians just like the beginning of the world in general.

Although she had already carried out 'Open Hole Process' through her body of immortal arteries and she also had more than 10 years of cultivation, but still since she hadn't actually practised any Immortal Technique so far, so naturally, her Zhenqi would act like this.

Not good.

She suddenly realized that her body seemed to have nothing on it and was lying completely naked?

All of a sudden she panicked, wanted to get up quickly and examine what exactly happened after all!

"Wan'er, are you awake? Do not you worry, it's me."

Ye Feng ran upto her and said in a soft voice, then he supported her stature and embraced her in his bosom : "Don't worry, everything is all right."

At this instant, her beautiful eyes opened widely and saw that Ye Feng was similarly totally naked just like her, making her cheeks suddenly become all red.

"What happened?"

However, all of a sudden she responded as she thought that certainly, something strange happened in the village regarding which she didn't know yet, which might have forced Long Mo'ran let them off safely. Otherwise, as per her opinion, it was absolutely impossible for them to escape the murderous intention and violent treachery of her father.

It was natural to think like that, anyway, now she was with Ye Feng, hence nothing mattered to her anymore.

Her hand made an effort and suddenly pulled him into the bed!

Ye Feng was helpless, this young girl, how could she still be so aggressive?

On the bed, under a quilt, wrapping his arm around her soft and smooth stature, Ye Feng slowly narrated the whole incident which had taken place in that small fishing village, however, it took him a lot of time: “..... So, now you are an Immortal Cultivator, as for the previous Long Clan’s Core Techniques, you can’t use them anymore.

“Immortal Cultivator, who?”

Her elusive eyes revealed a trace of surprise.

The more she listened to the words said by Ye Feng, the more she felt inconceivable, was she really the legendary body of immortal arteries? Did her body really have seven hidden acupuncture points to store a huge lot of spiritual energy? Did this spiritual energy really erupted from her body and caused a huge storm resonance, which later on produced several hurricane tornados and blew away Long Mo’ran to somewhere unknown?

These were not important issues, the most important thing was did this world really have Immortal Cultivator?

She believed that Ye Feng wouldn’t deceive her!

If such being the case, then it wasn’t at all unusual and surprising if Ye Feng could cast Invisibility and release a fireball. So, it seemed that these were Immortal Techniques.

“Now, just like you, can I also cast Invisibility and release a fireball?”

She asked that being a little sceptical.

“Well once you comprehend them, then certainly you can.”

Ye Feng smiled as he clung onto her and kissed her on her face fiercely, then moved towards her ear : “Come, now I teach you.

Literally speaking, Immortal Cultivation was similar to the martial arts Cultivation, even the use of Zhenqi and inner qi was almost the same

except for minor differences. He believed that considering Long Wan'er's talent, she could easily comprehend Immortal Cultivation in no time.

If compared with Su Menghan, obviously Long Wan'er's foundation was much more practical and profound. She already had 12 years and 6 months of Cultivation during this starting phase, which was probably higher than Ye Feng's current ten years of Cultivation!

In the ancient tomb, since Ye Feng had no alternative, so he quietly stole away her spiritual energy equal to her one year of Cultivation.

If he wanted to impart Immortal Cultivation to her, then certainly he must start with Core Techniques. However, he thought that better he should teach her Star Tomb Tactics first.

Although he knew a plenty of Immortal Cultivation Techniques, however, he was most familiar with Star Tomb Tactics only. If he practised its Core Techniques, then absolutely nothing would go wrong. However, what most essential issue was all those Immortal Techniques he was familiar with, needed Star Tomb Tactics' practice first, to become capable of using them.

In the world of the Immortals, before achieving 20 years of Cultivation, there were several common Immortal Techniques, such as Invisibility, Red Inflammation, Holy Cure Technique and so on. But after 20 years of Cultivation, there remained just a few common Immortal Techniques. Talking about Su Feiying, her Immortal Techniques were mostly revolving around Star Tomb Tactics.

Several Immortal Techniques which were generally used by the high-level Immortal Cultivators, were of various kinds, so two persons could never be exactly the same based on their skills.

Regarding the operation of Core Techniques, Long Wan'er already had ample experience, because of which very quickly she grasped Star Tomb Tactics and also finally started the orderly revolution of her Zhenqi within her body, the small revolution, the big revolution, every moment her Cultivation kept on growing.

Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, Invisibility, Red Inflammation, Holy

Cure Technique, immediately all these techniques were one by one imparted by Ye Feng to her. However, the point was, how long she would take to understand her own talent.

He thought that in this East China Sea's flood, he would teach her Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique, so that even if she got trapped in the sea, she wouldn't get drowned so easily and could hold on like this for at least one or two days.

Long Wan'er displayed these Immortal Techniques one after another to record them down in her memory. Her snow-white body, just like an octopus, looked very soft and greasy on his body. Naughtily she smiled: "Now I separate myself from Long Clan, but then you, if you ever dare to abandon me, I'll straightaway bring your identity as an Immortal cultivator into the light, hee hee.

He already knew that she was just cracking a joke, hence wickedly said: "If you dare speak it out, then I'll grab your buttocks and will beat it to the pulp.

"Scoundrel, you dare hit me!"

Her cheeks turned red and she immediately got up from the bed and sat on his waist, however then, suddenly she thought something : "Yes, aunt ....."

"Relax, she's all right and is also here."

Ye Feng comforted her, then, swallowed his saliva, this little girl was really daring, how smoothly she slipped away and bravely sat on his waist, still not afraid of his beastly nature which might eat her up completely any moment?

He was just waiting for the right time to teach this little girl and make her become aware of its ferocity. But it seemed that if he would wait for the right time, she would continue tempting him all day long. Not even the Ironman could bear it, ah!

However, at present, the crucial point was he hadn't told her the most important thing yet.



Those who attained ten years of Immortal Cultivation could easily congeal out Soul Search Technique, which was again the biggest disparity between the Immortal Cultivation and the martial arts Cultivation! Once she mastered this technique, she could easily grasp the surrounding all sounds and movements, then she wouldn't need to hide from any ambush

“Next, I teach you a special ability.”

Ye Feng pushed the little girl's body down since he didn't want to let her play dirty tricks with him, at the same time, he started explaining the function of Soul Search Technique.

The more she listened to the explanation, the more amazed she was :  
“What, you cheat people, how a person can be like a radar!”

## Chapter 176 - Control A Bit

---

However, Long Wan'er couldn't believe Ye Feng's words, because in this world, having such a strange technique like Soul Search Technique was indeed hard to believe.

Just like a radar, one could also clearly sense everything present in the surrounding. Moreover, if everyone in the world of the Immortals was Immortal Cultivator, then couldn't it be said that this technique wasn't secret over there?

“With the help of this technique, an Immortal Cultivator can easily sense everything falls in his surrounding range and then can naturally shield himself.”

Ye Feng smiled: “Therefore, in the Immortals' world, this technique isn't considered as anything special. But on this planet, as long as we have this technique, there is nothing which could remain hidden from us.”

A moment later, Long Wan'er finally believed this argument, because now, she could also personally feel it.

Having Ye Feng by her side to help her practice this technique, made the whole process very simple for her. In the beginning, she used it very clumsily, however, after trying for a long time, she finally succeeded in proliferating this technique in the whole room.

She clicked her tongue in amazement, so was this technique also very powerful?

Now that she had the perspective eyes, she could easily feel wardrobe, next door as well as the situation outside! This feeling wasn't just involved seeing things around, rather was like a feeling of personally touching the same, actually, it was a very different feeling.

This wonderful feeling all of a sudden made her totally infatuated with

it. She happily hugged Ye Feng in her arms and kissed him crazily several times.

Feeling her soft and smooth white hands around his body, made him unable to endure any more, he simply wanted to press her down under his body severely in some way. However, unfortunately, now was not the right time to do that, he had some more important things to handle.

He didn't know yet what was the condition of that Taiji Palace's masked youth. He was directly pierced by Thunder Sword qi, because of which he was really severely injured, even the Holy Cure Technique wasn't good to start with.

Moreover, tonight, the big coral king was going to mature, he couldn't let it go. Hence he needed to recharge his batteries at all cost. If presently, because of his burning passion, he went too far with Long Wan'er, then at the crucial time, he might suffer badly.

To be able to enhance his Cultivation by five years, he could never give up that opportunity!

"Well, Aunt is outside."

Long Wan'er was playing cheerfully in the blanket, right then suddenly she felt that outside at the door, there was a person's shadow standing, making her immediately lean against Ye Feng.

Ye Feng slipped his arms around her, simultaneously swept his Soul Search Technique and also found that someone was standing outside. It was Shu Shu and it seemed that she was being hesitant to knock at the door.

By this time, Shu Shu had already taken a bath and had found a clean one piece long dress in her room to put on. However, the thing that made Ye Feng almost unable to bear was that piece of dress she had worn, it actually was a pure black V-neck, low-neckline skirt, making her mature fullness appear more captivating and stirring.

"Little Feng, Wan'er, you people inside?"

After hesitating for a long time, Shu Shu finally knocked at the door

and asked softly.

“You idiot, what should we do now?”

Long Wan'er waved her fist softly and hammered on his chest a bit. Since both of them were in a completely bare state, then how could they open the door?

She clumsily swept Soul Search Technique towards the bathroom and found her clothes hanging inside along with Ye Feng's clothes, while a fireball was under them to dry them up, but it seemed that the job wasn't done yet.

“I'll go, you rest.”

Ye Feng kissed her wildly on her long and snow-white nape of the neck, then, jumped out of the bed.

“Aunt, coming right away.”

He shouted, then entered the bathroom to put on his clothes which were still wet. Anyway, he had to go to the sea soon, so wet clothes wouldn't create any big difference. As for Long Wan'er's clothes, the heat of the fireball produced by Red Inflammation wouldn't take long to dry them up, so she could change her clothes awhile later.

After getting properly dressed, he arrived at the entrance and opened the door, where he saw Shu Shu, clad in a black, V-neck one piece dress, was standing and waiting quietly outside.

Seeing Ye Feng staring at her, Shu Shu's matured and attractive face turned red at once, as if she also knew that the dress she had put on was a quite exposed one. But she had no other choice, her own clothes were dripping soaked, so when she looked for a clean and dry cloth in the room, then noticed that the room actually had mostly exposed clothes. Hence, under such circumstances, she could only pick a clean one to put on.

“Aunt, come inside.”

Ye Feng invited her inside very politely, besides he also knew that just

like Long Wan'er, she also couldn't go back to Long Clan anymore.

“Don't be so polite.”

Seeing him being so courteous, Shu Shu blushed a little accompanied with a sweet smile: “You young people, try to keep a little control, that would be better .....

A while ago, when she had knocked at the door, then waited outside for a while before Ye Feng opened the door. So naturally she could guess that after hastily putting on the clothes, he opened the door. Not to mention when she looked inside and saw Long Wan'er hiding under a blanket as if she hadn't worn anything, making her even more sure about her guess.

Ye Feng wondered for a while, what should he control a bit?

Could it be that Shu Shu also thought that just now he had done something with Long Wan'er which was not suitable for her?

Think about it, it seemed quite suspicious .....

He shook his head and decided not to think about it anymore, then, he smiled helplessly: “Aunt, you come in and chat with her, I am going to see how the boy is.

“Eh?”

Shu Shu was somewhat startled : “Actually, I have come here to examine your wound .....

“Don't worry, I'm all right.”

Ye Feng smiled, the wound he had on his chest had already been cured by the Holy Cure Technique.

“Youngsters always try to be brave.”

Shu Shu looked at his face holding somewhat annoyed expression as she thought that nowadays young people didn't want to treasure their own bodies. Wasn't his chest severely stabbed by Long Wuren's sword, then, how could his injury heal so fast?

“Come on, let your aunt see your wound for dressing.”

Shu Shu grabbed his arm and pulled him into the room.

Suddenly he felt the temperature of her hand, at the same time, the fragrance of her body also greeted his nostrils, making him suddenly blush and he slightly lowered his head. However now, he could clearly see under the black, V collar dress of her, a pair of rounded full along with a deep seductive gully.

Fuck, how obstinate this woman Shu Shu was, couldn't she believe his wound was already well?

He wondered, but since knew that her intention was pure, hence he couldn't break himself free. Suddenly he got pulled into the room and was pushed down to sit on the sofa.

“You are also blushing, we are not strangers anymore, so why are you being so bashful?”

Shu Shu saw his facial expression and smiled a bit while covering her mouth. Then after, her white hands pull him and ripped open his cloth, making his chest visible to her.

Due to Long Wuren's sword, Ye Feng's shirt was already little torn, while the rest was now pulled by her and tore open. However the moment Shu Shu's eyes fell on his chest, she couldn't help but her eyes turn wide open, while her delicate hand covered her lips, an incredible appearance!

The astonishing matter was, there was not even a little trace of any wound on his chest!

“Aunt, well, let him go.”

Long Wan'er, wrapped in a quilt, looked at Shu Shu's expression and felt a bit funny : “His healing level is much fiercer than yours.”

However, she knew that Ye Feng must have used Holy Cure Technique!

“Ah ... I'll go first, you people carry on.”

Ye Feng felt a little embarrassment facing her, so he hastily ran away

from the room and finally felt relieved. But even after walking outside the room, his mind couldn't help but keep on imagining Shu Shu's that matured and plentiful physique .....

He shook his head and shrugged this thought of his mind. Anyway, firstly, he had to examine that unconscious youth and then should prepare to go to snatch away the big Coral King.

He believed that the big Coral King was such a holy treasure which must provide enough strength to the martial artists. Because of which, they could absolutely not let it go, even if the tsunami turned as fiercer as a tiger and there arose a heart-chilling competition between the people!

## Chapter 177 - Unusual Cold

---

After pressing down these beautiful thoughts, Ye Feng went 32 steps downstairs, then swept his Soul Search Technique and felt that Taiji Palace's youth still hadn't woken up, while Nan Fang was actually sleeping aside, constantly making a whirring noise.

The Hidden Immortal Tactics Nan Fang was studying before, he had already successfully operated it and that also quite smoothly. So according to his talent, it could be said that he could comprehend 'Crying Ghost Blade Technique' in no time.

And at the right time, Ye Feng would teach him Asura Sect's 'Ghost Shadow Soul Step', then he would absolutely become the top-notch killer. At least having Ye Feng by his side meant his growth potential would definitely surpass any other disciple of the Hidden Immortal Faction.

As for the Immortal Cultivation, Ye Feng hadn't told him temporarily, after all, this was his biggest secret.

He pushed open the door and entered the room. Then he walked towards the masked youth and started examining him. Soon he noticed that this boy was around 18-19 years old, but still actually had 10 years of Cultivation, indeed his strength was impressive. But unfortunately, he bumped into persistently unreasonable Li Feng and the tragedy happened.

Ye Feng thought to help this boy take off the mask permanently, therefore, he looked at his face which had severely burnt marks. However, he didn't want to cast Holy Cure Technique for so long.

The golden light flashed and began shrouding the whole body of the boy. Just recently, in the torrential rain, he was hit by a Thunder Sword qi and was badly injured. Now his entire body's necrotic cell as well as his disfigured face, both started recovering at a speed which was visible



to the naked eye!

Ten minutes, twenty minutes, half an hour .....

Time kept on rolling until Ye Feng's Zhenqi once again got totally used up, then he stopped. But the masked boy had already recovered a bit, even his previously burnt face's necrotic cells had shed off. As long as he took a bath, he could make him no longer wear a mask to see people in the future.

This could be regarded as a little return to this boy for rescuing Shu Shu.

For the Immortal Cultivators, there were no such words like "disfigurement of face". But again, talking about Mo Jiuge, of course, he was naturally an ugly guy. And as per Ye Feng's view, even though there was splendid plastic surgery technology on this plane, but still they couldn't do anything to do honour to the face of Mo Jiuge.....

The sky was gradually darkening, Ye Feng could clearly feel that the tide was spreading gradually from the coast, while the coastline was still elevating.

The water had already entered the entire village up to the ankle area. On the basis of this speed, till tomorrow morning, most likely, the first floor of the house they were in, would be submerged.

At present, if he went back to the centre of Xiangshan County, then certainly he would become too conspicuous. And in case, he was found by either Long Clan or God Fist Gate, then the consequences could be disastrous, so temporarily staying here would be a good option.

After chatting with Long Wan'er for awhile, Shu Shu went downstairs to find some food in the refrigerator and then soon made a simple supper.

Because the downstairs was already flooded with water, so they decided to have their dinner upstairs. Except for that unconscious masked youth, the rest four people were together at the dining table.

"I am starving to death, elder brother!"

On seeing the sight of full table meals, Nan Fang's eyes lit up just like a reincarnated starved ghost.

“You eat more and then take a good rest in the evening.”

Ye Feng continued while eating: “Wan'er, you have to pay attention in the evening so be alert, if there is any situation, then immediately call Nan Fang and discuss with him.

Now she also had Soul Search Technique, so nobody could even think of approaching the house silently, whereas Nan Fang had a superb interpretation and decision-making capability. Therefore having him meant no matter how strong the enemy would be, he could always come up with several ways to deal with.

“Hmm and you?”

Long Wan'er listened to him speaking like this and suddenly turned somewhat anxious : “Where do you want to go?”

“I'll go to have a look at the big Coral King.”

He said firmly.

“What!”

The rest three people, sitting at the dining table, were suddenly thunderstruck, so Ye Feng still had the willingness to grab the big Coral King? In their opinion, they should now just try to find an opportunity to leave the East China Sea at once, however, Ye Feng wanted to do things exactly the opposite.

“I'll go for the big coral king alone, you just stay here, will try to come back as soon as possible.”

Ye Feng emphasised.

“Are you sure?”

Nan Fang wrinkled his eyebrows, although had no objection, but just wanted to inquire a bit.

“Yes, I am.”

Ye Feng nodded.

“Then I can rest assured.”

Nan Fang smiled, then without arguing with him furthermore, he continued to have his meal.

It must be said that Shu Shu's cooking skill was splendid, especially now, when everyone was starving and had already turned into the hungry wolves. At such a time, a table full of delicious food was soon wiped out like how a wind used to sweep away scattered clouds.

Although Ye Feng didn't want to make such comparison, but he had to acknowledge that dishes cooked by Shu Shu, if was compared with Su Menghan's cooking, then it could be said that it was just beyond comparison .....

“Take care of yourself.”

Shu Shu thought that she neither had the right to speak nor could persuade Ye Feng in any form, hence she softly said: “Must remember that Wan'er is still here waiting for you, so your should be the most important thing here”.

Long Wan'er heard this and her face turned red, but still she said supporting her Aunt : “Right, if you don't come back, I affirm that I will accompany you.

She wanted to go along with him but then changed her mind as she thought that besides Ye Feng, she was the only one here who knew using Soul Search Technique. Hence, if she would also leave with him, then Aunt's security couldn't be guaranteed. Moreover, Ye Feng might not allow her to accompany him. Therefore, she finally dispelled this idea.

“Relax, why I would think of shrugging you off, even if I fail to grab the big Coral King, still will come back.

Ye Feng helplessly tried to comfort her, but this little girl's words were quite ominous. Moreover, why should she accompany him, was her Ye Feng so weak?

After finishing supper, Ye Feng took a break for a while. Soon he noticed that the sky was gradually darkening, which made him feel that now was the time to set out!

Long Wan'er leant on his arms: "Come back soon."

"Will do."

Ye Feng held her gently in his bosom, then, walked down the stairs while putting a black grimace mask on his face.

She looked at him from behind, Shu Shu, who was standing next to her, draped over her shoulder and then tenderly smiled: "Rest assured, just now how Long Mo'ran couldn't harm us, just like that, everything will be certainly all right tonight."

"Hmm....."

Long Wan'er nodded, although she leant against Shu Shu, but her complexion was appearing little complexed, from now on, the two of them couldn't go back to Long Clan ever.

Fortunately, now she had at least Ye Feng to depend on, but Aunt?

However, at this moment, Nan Fang didn't have these many thoughts, he just yawned and said: "I am going to sleep now, Miss Long, if there is any problem, directly knock at the door."

"Dead pigs only know one thing and that is sleeping, go."

Long Wan'er drove him away impolitely: "But I am not Miss Long of a rich and powerful Clan."

"Well, its aunt, okay?"

Nan Fang said that, then waved his hand towards those two women and departed.

Although he was little heartless, but he had an optimistic attitude, which made these two women suddenly feel slightly relaxed. These two women, holding hands, started praying in her hearts for Ye Feng's safety.

While on the other side, Ye Feng, wearing a mask, came downstairs

and the moment he stepped into the water which had reached up to his ankle, suddenly was hit by an icy-cold feeling as if it was penetrating him to the bone.

His heart moved a bit.

In the morning, when they jumped into the sea from the cliff, afterwards he noticed that it was gradually getting colder nearby the sea, however now, it was more obvious. Things seemed to be very unusual, at least, as per what his memory hinted him, the modern society seemed to have not seen this kind of strange thing.

“Does it have any relation with Master?”

He couldn't control himself from thinking that sometimes, something couldn't be explained in scientific terms and that was what generally happened in the world of the Immortals.

However, even though, Su Feiying had a hundred years of Cultivation, but it was still impossible for her to create such a wide scope of cold .....

He shook his head as he thought that no matter what the truth was, he had to grasp the big Coral King first! But he didn't know how many people would be there tonight to compete for the big Coral King.

## Chapter 178 - Yin Soul Fake Body Technique

---

The moment Ye Feng stepped into the water, suddenly felt that the water was icy-cold, but he had to go all the way to the south.

Long Wan'er had shown him the position of the big Coral King before, which he had already recorded it in his mind, hence it was easy to find it following the direction.

Quietly, he cast out Invisibility and dashed towards the destination. In the meantime, he also found that the more he was getting closer to the south, the deeper the water was getting bit by bit, the mighty waves were also rolling over and over crazily, while the water was, even more, piercing cold.

Immortal Technique, Dragon Turtle Holding Breath!

After running around five kilometres, he displayed this Technique and jumped into the water. To this place, the water surface had already reached a person's height. The sky was darker, while far in the sky, the thunder and lightning were continuously showing their power, along with the violent storm, which seemed to never stop. Everything altogether was demonstrating that the weather outside the East China Sea was extremely nasty.

Once he entered the water, suddenly he picked up a high speed. Moreover, his Soul Search Technique was also assisting him, making him feel like he was a fish back in the water. He was advancing rapidly by easily avoiding the various floating things like wood, ruins, debris, etc, appearing right against his face.

He believed that even an expert martial artist, almost equal to Long Mo'ran's class, couldn't catch up with his speed in the water!

As he was moving ahead, simultaneously, the sea water was also getting deeper and more and more icy-cold, however, as for him, he was

actually getting closer to his destination. When he was very close to the coastline, then swept his Soul Search Technique and found a little movement not far away from there.

Around 20-30 martial artists were gathered there for the competition! Their position was on the towering coastal cliff because that place was presently the only land of the sea. In addition, the distance from that place to the big Coral King was the nearest from the rest of the places.

Ye Feng stopped at once and decided to explore for awhile since he wanted to find out who would be participating in this competition, so that he could prepare himself properly in advance.

“So, Long Mo’ran really hasn’t died yet.”

He swept his Soul Search and noticed that on the cliff, in the rain, Long Mo’ran’s stature was still appearing lofty and at present, he was commanding his Clan’s people to put on the diving outfit and equipment.

However this time, the sword Long Mo’ran had in his scabbard before, it had been actually replaced by another one. Ye Feng could easily feel the quality of the sword was not as good as before. It seemed that the resonance explosion caused by Long Wan’er’s body back then, which had curled Long Mo’ran up and thrown him away somewhere, during then his sword must have lost somewhere in the vast sea and now there was no way to find it.

He secretly sneered and continued checking the rest of the people.

In the Long Clan, altogether there were just three powerhouses including Long Mo’ran, who had over 50 years of Cultivation, while the rest of them were just playing around, or they were there just to be used for sacrifices. Interestingly, Long Zi and Long Qing were also not one of the powerhouses.

Apart from Long Clan, there were other twelve super powerful martial artists from Tang Clan, Heavenly Sword Palace and other top martial arts sects, who were also taking part in this competition.

Ye Feng noticed that these martial arts were rolling up their sleeves for

battle while looking at each other maliciously, which force him to chuckle in his heart while thinking that at the crucial moment, when these people would be clashing with each other, it would be more conducive to him to capture the big Coral King.

After waiting for a while, he decided to display an Immortal Technique, which he hadn't used it ever in this world – Yin Soul Fake Body Technique!

When an Immortal Cultivator used this technique, then he could actually condense out a fake body to use him as a puppet. However, it also had some obvious shortcomings, when there was the existence of Yin Soul Fake Body, then the detection range of that Immortal Cultivator's Soul Search Technique used to reduce by half.

That was the reason why he never displayed this technique before, but now, the use of a Fake body was obviously a more appropriate action. As long as he controlled it well, this Fake body could attract the attention of the opposite party and then he could take advantage of the opportunity to act .....

Quietly, he contracted his Soul Search Technique, simultaneously congealed his Zhenqi out in the form of a puppet youth wearing a mask, who looked exactly the same as him, quite realistic and genuine!

...

When Ye Feng was about to launch his action, on the other side, carrying Ye Wentian and Su Menghan, Hummer H2 finally arrived at Xiangshan County and stopped in the centre of the city.

“Grandpa, don't get too tired, let's have a dinner first, okay?”

Su Menghan gently, a bit considerately said: “You see, we don't know anyone here, so looking for a person would be too difficult.”

“I'll think of a way, so little girl, you don't have to worry about it.”

Ye Wentian thought that she was playing the idea of purposely delaying the time, hence he immediately pulled out his cell phone and made a phone call. The only one he could contact with in order to find a



person was the NSA since he had already heard that the NSA people were also here, so he thought to just ask them to help him in his investigation.

Thunder quickly answered the phone, but as soon as he heard Ye Wentian's voice, his face immediately turned somewhat bitter.

At present, Thunder was busy finding a way to send people to the iceberg island, he was totally occupied in this process. He had no time to help him find someone, so he could only just narrate the incident which had happened before in the small village.

Since Ye Wentian had a connection with Lin Clan, so Thunder used to very much respect him.

“He went towards the south.”

Ye Wentian knew that the masked man was Ye Feng, so he immediately hung up the phone to make a decision.

“Grandpa, I'm hungry, let's eat something first, ok?”

She started to act like a spoiled brat by using both hard and soft tricks.

“Little girl, you know quite well how to procrastinate for him.”

He said that as he looked at her pretty but miserable appearance. He couldn't vent his anger on her, therefore only said: “See, when he would have an accident or something, you will be the one who would feel too late to regret! Well, okay then let's eat something first!”

Although Su Menghan smiled but was obviously a little worried deep inside her heart.

Ever since Ye Feng left Yanjing, she couldn't get through his phone, hence she didn't have any idea how the situation was there presently, was there any danger?

...

Xiangshan County's centre, in a private room of a top-notch family restaurant's.

“Beautiful women, just relax.”

Wang Shaodong, with a dog-shaped jade hanging around his neck, said with a smile: “In the morning, I hired more than ten local people especially to look for the masked boy and I believe, soon there will be some news related to his whereabouts.

At this moment, his eyes were all stuck at the most noticeable and prettiest lady present there. This extreme beauty was not only considered as the first beauty of Yanjing, but she also belonged to Yanjing’s Lin Clan, no matter which place they arrived, they used to make their extremely dazzling presence!

Lin Shiqing!

Altogether four people were there in that private room, in addition to Wang Shaodong, Lin Shiqing, Xiao Qi and Xiao Yue were there.

“Elder sister, you saw him but why didn’t you tell me that?”

Xiao Qi was sitting close to Xiao Yue, holding a very annoyed look on her face, which was instead making her look very cute. If it were not for Lin Shiqing who obtained information from the NSA, she would have never known that the masked man had shown up here. Although Xiao Yue met him before but actually she didn’t tell her anything about it!

“You little girl, that person already have a woman, so why are you blindly following him?”

Xiao Yue was in a foul mood, hence immediately chided her, while her fuller front supported her words by rhythmically bouncing under her red dress.

“Elder Sister!”

Xiao Qi’s face turned red at once: “I am looking for him, not for that ..... In short, he has saved me, that’s why I just want to find him!

“Wang Shaodong, I hope your people would act a bit faster to obtain the news, even if the day is dark today.....”

Lin Shiqing seemingly said a bit calmly, although had worn a set of

white casual attire, but actually couldn't conceal her elegant heroic appearance.

In fact, she was a bit anxious in her heart, as per the information conveyed by the NSA, because of an unclear picture of the weather, the whole road leading to the coast of Xiangshan County had been blocked, so going to the beach to find the masked man was not only difficult but was also extremely dangerous.

As per her status, obviously Thunder wouldn't let her have the opportunity to take risks, besides, she was also afraid that once she stepped out of this restaurant, someone would immediately seize her so that she couldn't run around.

“Rest assured, I try to find the native people of this place.....”

Wang Shaodong vowed solemnly, but right then, his cell phone suddenly rang up. He pulled it out and the moment he looked at the number, a happy expression crawled on his face : “Look, there is a news, we have definitely found that kid!

## Chapter 179 - Coral Cluster

---

One of the hired men of Wang Shaodong passed him a message that by taking a secret route through a small hill forest route and then passing through the police blockade line, he could come all the way to the seacoast.

After crossing the hill forest, there was a village, which had already been evacuated and where the sea water had also inundated to the ankle. However, some bludglers found that there were still few people residing in that village!

Although it didn't determine that there was the masked man, but it could be considered as a clue. After all, the news of windstorm had already been passed on everywhere, so ordinary people would never dare to still stay in the village regardless of their lives. Even if they didn't want to leave, but would have been forced by the police to leave.

Wang Shaodong heard that and immediately stood up as he wanted to personally go over there, at the same time, quietly, he sent a text message to his hired bludgers, ordering them that once they found the masked man, must kill him and throw him directly into the sea. Luckily in this weather, this incident would remain a complete secret!

Simultaneously, clad in a red one-piece dress, Xiao Yue also got up to catch up with him, leaving behind Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi in the room. These two women didn't come forward because they knew that they were under the supervision of the NSA, so most likely they couldn't leave Xiangshan County.

“Elder sister, you have to be careful.”

When Xiao Qi saw her sister leaving with Wang Shaodong, she turned a bit worried in her heart while thinking that just at a glance, she felt that this guy, Wang Shaodong didn't seem to be a nice person. But now,

she was too late, did Xiao Yue have some matter with him alone?

“Don’t worry.”

A smile spread on Xiao Yui’s face along with a trace of ample confidence which her face revealed.

As per these two women, they left here because they wanted to look for the masked man and return safely along with him. However, Wang Shaodong and Xiao Yue didn’t think so, Wang Shaodong wanted to kill Ye Feng, while Xiao Yue didn’t want to let him get close to Xiao Qi even half a step .....

Wang Shaodong and Xiao Yue took some off-road equipment like flashlights and so on for the night and set out together. They decided to go to the seacoast as fast as possible.

“We should also think of a way, better to keep up with.”

Lin Shiqing talked in whispers to discuss with Xiao Qi, the masked man was very important to them and at present, the NSA didn’t have the time to look for him, so they could only depend on themselves.

As for Wang Shaodong and Xiao Yue, obviously, Lin Shiqing couldn’t completely trust them.

Xiao Qi nodded and the two women began to make plans .....

Shortly after, in another family restaurant, Ye Wentian and Su Menghan, after finishing their meal, also similarly set out to go to the southern seacoast.

For Ye Wentian, even if Su Menghan was tagged along with him, still breaking through the police blockade line was too easy for him!

.....

By this time, Ye Feng had successfully created the Yin Soul Fake Body.

This fake body similarly had Soul Search Technique with a certain detection range. Even after separating this body, Ye Feng could easily manipulate it from quite afar and perceive the situation happening around it. Of course, the detection scope of the fake body was very small,

this thing could only feel the situation within ten meters of range, but was still more than enough.

After making a fake body, Ye Feng turned around and advanced towards the place where the big Coral King was.

As he was proceeding towards his destination, the sea water was also simultaneously becoming icy-cold and piercing, while the undercurrent was surging forcefully too. Even though he was under the spell of Dragon Turtle Holding Breath, but was still enormously hindered by the piercing cold water.

One could imagine, once Long Mo'ran and other people jumped into the sea, they would certainly face even greater obstacles.

“Really cold, this nearby seabed definitely has the occurrence of some unusual situation. While waiting to grab the big Coral King, I must check around properly, most probably it has some relation with the master .....

He thought in his heart. Just like a fish, he was continuously swimming towards his destination.

In the seabed, various undercurrents were turbulent, even the terminal velocity of some ice pieces moving around was making abundant of sea fishes all rattled. Those fishes which were too late to dodge, were cut into two by the sharp ice pieces.

At this time, the seabed was very perilous and was already rippling the dirty smell of fishes everywhere!

Ye Feng was the only one there, who didn't need to borrow the help of any diving equipment in such a submarine action. While the other people, including Long Mo'ran, needed to take the diving equipment before stepping into the sea.

Even if the breath holding time of the group of martial artists was put together, still couldn't be compared with Ye Feng's holding time, this was the dreadful effect of Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique.

The seabed was so pitch-dark that one could only occasionally see some

fluorescent living creatures in the depth of the seabed.

The detection range of his Soul Search Technique had been reduced by half, therefore now, he could only sense thing appearing within 50 meters of range. Soon, a row of several strange things caught his attention.

Although he hadn't yet arrived at the location where the big Coral King was, but could see in the vicinity, there was some sophisticated equipment floating all over. Actually, some sophisticated surveillance cameras were monitoring the nearby water area.

Once someone got close to the big Coral King, he would be surely found by the martial artists!

Though they were the martial artists, but that didn't mean they couldn't understand the modern technology, on the contrary, they could utilise the technology much more efficiently than the general public.

Ye Feng didn't act rashly, instead, he turned around very carefully and found that similar precision small cameras were there in dozens, which were installed in the seabed grotto, soil and some other covert places.

If he were an ordinary person, he could never have found these cameras. Since he was an Immortal Cultivator who also knew using Soul Search Technique, so these cameras failed to escape his sensation.

“Well, there are several cameras which have already been destroyed by the turbulent current and ice pieces. So long as I move slowly, I can eliminate all these cameras installed in this region and believe it won't cause any suspicion!

Ye Feng's Zhenqi suddenly surged and the golden sword emerged out in the seabed. But unfortunately, since there was utter darkness in the seabed, along with such weather, which had made the whole sea water look all muddy, so not even this bright golden light could spread too far.

Puff .....Puff .....Puff .....

An expensive submarine camera was destroyed by his sword!

Suddenly the seabed turbulent flow rapidly rushed forth, he didn't know from where these floating ice chunks were arriving, which were not only countless in number but were also very small in size. But again, crushing these cameras was quite normal. Even if the people, monitoring the scene, became suspicious, still they wouldn't doubt Ye Feng for this.

Having spent a little time in crushing these cameras, Ye Feng, broke into the place where the big Coral King was, like a fish, with irresistible force.

A vast array of red coral cluster soon appeared in his perception range, making him have a scare.

"Isn't there supposed to be a big Coral King? But actually, there are plenty of small corals!"

In the middle of the coral cluster, a big Coral King was dazzling and exuding a rich spiritual energy. However, in its periphery, there were dozens of the small coral group, which if absorbed, could also upgrade Cultivation by one or two years!

Before, Ye Feng was little worried about Su Menghan, Nan Fang and Scar as they didn't have any means to quickly promote their skill, but had never expected that he would run into such a pleasant surprise here.

"Well, so they acted?"

At this moment, Ye Feng's fake body sensed that the group of martial artists including Long Mo'ran, after completing their preparation, finally started putting on the precision diving equipment and then one after another jumped into the sea, all prepared to rob the fruit.

As a result, his fake body, hiding in the seabed, was all of a sudden got discovered by them!



## Chapter 180 - Bloodstained East China Sea

---

When the light of several underwater searchlights fell on Ye Feng's fake body, Ye Feng immediately reacted and controlled the fake one, making it swim towards the opposite direction, with an extremely fast speed.

The two powerhouses of God Fist Gate along with Long Mo'ran wanted to pursue his fake body! Luo Feng was such a talented disciple of God Fist Gate but was indirectly killed by Ye Feng, besides, Long Mo'ran was also ridiculously defeated by him and lost his honour. The old grudge could be said as absolutely irreconcilable.

Ye Feng's fake body could move exactly like the real body and could also survey the surrounding small scope of the scene. However, it couldn't cast any Immortal Technique; after all, it was just a puppet which didn't have the existence of Zhenqi within his body.

In the seabed, his fake body quickly moved, leading Long Mo'ran along with the other two God Fist Gate's men, more and more away from their destination.

“Paochui Fist!”

However, right then, finally, the opposite party approached quickly and one of them assigned his inner qi away from his body, instantaneously making his two fists rush into the water and hit his fake body.

Buzz!

A circle of ripples suddenly proliferated from his fake body, simultaneously his speed also declined dramatically. It seemed that he was really seriously injured.

Immediately after, Long Mo'ran also kicked in the water and cast out Dragon Leg Technique! His overbearing inner qi, with an extreme force, suddenly penetrated the sea water and kicked his fake body heavily, making it burst into a blue smoke and then it swiftly dissipated with a

sound “Thump”.

Once hit by a fatal blow, Yin Soul Fake Body immediately disappeared without leaving any trace.

This scene, however, left Long Mo’ran and other two men totally stunned and their hearts sank, what was this stuff, just now, they obviously hit that guy, but how did he suddenly change into a blue smoke and disappeared in the water?

Quite Strange!

But the three people didn’t dare to stay there for a long time because the other martial artists were already on their way to the big Coral King. They were already a little late, if they still stayed back, then, would almost lose the chance of snatching away the big Coral King.

Suddenly they turned around and switched on their searchlights, then rapidly advanced towards their destination. However, such a delay, they were already far behind the other people .....

.....

As the fake body disappeared, Ye Feng’s sensation finally returned to its normal state, now he could survey the surrounding 100 meters of range again. Although there was a big pile of corals, but he wasn’t a bit impatient, instead he stepped forward and quietly picked up a small coral, then, hid in the side and immediately started absorbing it.

The big Coral King was in the process of fast maturation and this process would roughly take around half an hour. Hence, picking it in advance would surely, greatly reduce its effect, which Ye Feng didn’t want to happen at any cost.

These martial artists should have a public agreement, according to which, after waiting for the big Coral King to mature, they must enter into a fair competition. This pile of corals also seemed to be associated with it, taking them early might not be a good idea. But now the big Coral King’s maturity was closer, Ye Feng didn’t need to control so much.

Since the big Coral King hadn’t matured yet, so he could pick small

corals to enhance his strength first!

Absorbing a small coral could enhance one's Cultivation by two years, this way, one could take advantage of it to compete for the big Coral King. Unfortunately, a small coral could only be absorbed once by the same person, otherwise, if these many small corals were put together, they would become much more precious than the big Coral King.

Ye Feng hid aside in a sea cave and began absorbing the spiritual energy of that small coral. He believed that if a small coral was taken out from such a huge coral group, then it would surely not catch people's attention.

Ten years and one month .....

Ten years and two months ...

Ye Feng's Cultivation once again began to grow up!

Also at this time, several martial artists finally began to show up in the scope of Ye Feng's perception. However the first person appeared was actually in an extremely difficult situation, his diving suit already had several blood stains all over, while one of his legs seemed to be cut by something, from where his fresh blood was dripping.

Ye Feng couldn't see that the opposite party belonged to any martial arts School or not. That fellow immediately arrived close to the coral group, observed them for a moment, then picked up three small corals and similarly hid aside.

Ye Feng noticed that this man's diving suit wasn't spacious enough, still if he would fill it with these three small corals, then how he would manage to keep the big one.

The second and third person also arrived there back to back and surprisingly they were also in a distressed condition. Obviously, the utter darkness together with icy-cold water had made the seabed quite perilous, which must have brought the enormous vexation to them.

Exactly like the first fellow, they also picked up three small corals respectively, then, found a place to hide separately.

Interestingly, no one could notice Ye Feng's presence, but Ye Feng was well aware of their movement. He didn't panic at all because the small corals were present in dozens and all of them couldn't be taken away by them ever, hence remaining would come under his clutch!

He didn't have any scruples, at the right time, he would use his jacket to collect all the corals and then would take them away. While others couldn't carry too many corals in such a perilous seabed, since it was an unpredictable life and death situation for them .....

Eleven years and eleven months!

Twelve years!

Quite soon, Ye Feng completed the absorption process and enhanced his Cultivation by two years. However, the remaining surplus spiritual energy of that coral couldn't enhance his Cultivation furthermore, but still, he absorbed it into his body to refill his Zhenqi, which he had lost so far, to make his strength again reach its highest peak.

"If my Cultivation reaches fifteen years, then I can cast Star Tomb Faction's first inheritance Immortal Technique ....."

Although he thought in his heart, but unfortunately, at present, his meridians could only withstand upto thirteen years of Cultivation. Even if he succeeded in snatching away the big Coral King, still couldn't immediately promote his Cultivation.

In such seabed, if he was caught in a fight, then could only cast Dragon sword qi. As for Red Inflammation, at his present level, definitely, he was unable to display it in the water, unless he comprehended its second layer .....

He didn't think much, simply swept his Soul Search Technique and felt that 12 martial arts experts had already arrived there and gathered around the big Coral King. They all belonged to various Sects and had more than fifty years of Cultivation!

As for the group of those Long Clan's people who had low Cultivation, no one reach there, it seemed that after stepping into the water, they

were killed by other people. And the remaining person, Long Mo'ran was extremely late.

There were several small corals still left in dozens, if they were not grabbed by Ye Feng, then would be completely wasted.

Right at this time, the big Coral King suddenly exuded a strange ray of light and finally at this moment, it started becoming glittering and translucent, as if it was about to mature any moment!

Long Mo'ran waited for all the martial artists hiding aside, to turn off their underwater searchlights since they didn't want to expose their whereabouts. A foreseeable battle was on the verge of its arrival!

“Such environment is favourable for me too!”

Ye Feng thought that with the help of Soul Search Technique, he could see the movement of everyone around, however for other people, not only they had to guard against other people, but also needed to take precautions against the turbulent current and sharp ice pieces. Especially after switching off the searchlights, they couldn't see anything in this pitch dark seabed, except the light the big Coral King was emitting then.

Puff!

Long Mo'ran launched his first shot; he had a very dense expression on his face at present. His sword jabbed into the chest of another person, making his blood dye the East China Sea instantly! For him, once someone hindered him, he would be eliminated right away!

Afterwards, suddenly he advanced towards the big Coral King.

However, just before him, another person of God Fist Gate also rushed towards it. Hastily, he picked it up and hid it into his diving suit to cover its glory.

All of a sudden, the entire sea turned pitch-black!

Ye Feng could feel that suddenly the surrounding smell of blood became more intense, it wasn't only the deed of Long Mo'ran, other people also similarly made their petty action. In such a dangerous seabed

battle, the casualty was obviously extremely serious.

For Ye Feng, the present seabed had completely turned into his stage!

## Chapter 181 - Ye Feng's Stage!

---

In the pitch-black seabed, nobody dared to turn on their underwater searchlights, otherwise would definitely become the target of public criticism.

However, this thing provided the best action environment for Ye Feng, perhaps he could now try to kill Long Mo'ran here!

He swept his Soul Search Technique and found that the big Coral King had already been captured by one of the experts of God Fist Gate and immediately after that, he started swimming back towards the shore, without stopping even for a moment. Along with the violent turbulent flow, several pieces of sharp ice were continuously popping up on his way, but he was quite aware of it, hence every time he moved aside to dodge them.

“It seems that the martial arts experts can also somewhat sense the danger getting close to them.”

Ye Feng knew fairly well.

In the scope of his Soul Search Technique, almost all of them, relying on the water flow, were pursuing that God Fist Gate's expert. Among them, Long Mo'ran was the fastest one and just in a flash, he took the lead!

However, Ye Feng decided not to pursue him, instead, he made his stature invisible, then quietly arrived close to the coral cluster, took off his coat, picked up the remaining all 12 small corals and wrapped them up into it.

After done packing these small corals, he carried them behind his back, then, silently moved towards the place where the other powerhouses had advanced chasing the big Coral King.

“Surprisingly, Long Mo'ran is actually blocked.”

He quickly clarified the situation ahead, when Long Mo'ran wanted to rush quickly to catch that God Fist Gate's expert, right then, another expert of God Fist Gate arrived in front of him and blocked his way, simultaneously threw a fist towards him!

Long Mo'ran couldn't dare to underestimate this fist, so he right away stopped his stature and carefully dealt with it. In this dark environment, all of them were blindly following suit, simply relying on their intuition and a little bit of perception, which couldn't be compared with Ye Feng's flexibility.

At this time, Ye Feng once again swept his Soul Search towards Long Mo'ran, simultaneously, quietly swam in that direction, displaying Dragon Turtle Holding Breath to streamline his body just like a fish in the water, with a terrifying speed, which was twice faster than other people.

Approached!

He maintained ten meters of safe distance from Long Mo'ran because according to his previous judgment, the perception scope of the other martial artists including Long Mo'ran was limited to just five meters. In that case, beyond ten meters of range, they couldn't even feel anything.

If it were an ordinary land, then probably the opposite party would have sensed his breath by now, but such a chaotic seabed was a totally different case.

“Beheading Dragon Sword qi!”

Ye Feng waited for the accurate opportunity, when he noticed that Long Mo'ran and God Fist Gate's expert were about to unfold their showdown, in that split second, his Zhenqi rushed and got condensed in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring and the next moment, the golden light flashed faintly in the muddy sea water!

An icy-blue Sword qi, penetrating through the turbulent flow of seawater, rapidly rushed towards Long Mo'ran, directly aiming at his head, by sweeping everything away from its way.



Ye Feng's sword was indeed very crafty!

But, Long Mo'ran instantly discovered that the approaching sword was inevitable, but if he tried to dodge this Sword qi, then would certainly be smashed by the fist of God Fist Gate's expert.

Obviously, his fist couldn't kill him, but he would get seriously injured, only if that God Fist Gate's expert used his one horse.

The moment his Sword qi penetrated the sea water, Long Mo'ran immediately realised something and his complexion changed at once, he hadn't thought that the masked man would actually launch a sneak from behind! Presently, in the East China Sea, other than him and the masked man "Mo Jiuge", no other martial arts experts could display a Sword qi. Therefore, he suddenly understood that he could be the one behind this sneak attack.

Now he had just two options left, facing his death or a serious injury, naturally, he would choose getting seriously injured over other.

His head slanted quickly to avoid this ice blue Sword qi, however, a burst of very cold air passed over scratching him, leaving behind a deep bloodstain on his face. At this propitious moment when Long Mo'ran was in an injured state, that expert of God Fist Gate didn't want to let go of this excellent opportunity.

Paochui Fist!

"Bang" a dull thumping sound passed on, his fist, holding extremely penetrating power, directly across the water, hit Long Mo'ran on his chest terribly.

Puff!

The moment his fist hit Long Mo'ran, he spouted a mouthful of fresh blood and then, in a flash, his stature turned around and fled towards the distant place.

If it were a land, then this catastrophic punch of that expert was dangerous enough to completely shatter the heart of Long Mo'ran at once! Unfortunately, in such a disordered seabed, the impact of his

punch was offset by the water, because of which Long Mo'ran could save his life.

In the martial arts world, one plus one could be far more than two, it was such a simple theory.

If singled out, then Long Mo'ran had an overwhelming advantage over both, either facing Ye Feng or God Fist gate's expert. But in such a harsh environment, facing attacks from both sides and that also one after another, he couldn't take it and was got badly injured.

Ye Feng wanted to pursue injured Long Mo'ran to get rid of him then and there, but right at this time, noticed that the expert of God Fist Gate turned back. Relying on his slight intuition, he could feel it was the same devastating fist, thrown by the opposite party, directly aiming towards him.

Obviously, that man also recognised his identity.

For Ye Feng, God Fist Gate also held its own share of considerable hatred!

At this instant, his stature instantly moved and avoided the fist of the opposite party, at the same time, also reached elegantly in the middle of the sea while escaping a giant ice piece like a flying saucer.

That flat flying saucer-type ice, from Ye Feng's side, dashed towards that expert, carrying a huge speed and slashed him!

Ye Feng could sense through his Soul Search that he was a fifty-year-old middle-aged man, who used to look mediocre and had just one unique thing about him and that seemed to be his high temple.

Unfortunately, such a formidable martial arts expert, although noticed a huge ice piece approaching speedily, but didn't get enough time to escape.

In a hurry, he swam in an upward direction, but the speed was not fast enough, that flying saucer-shaped ice suddenly hit him in the middle! Because of its huge impact, the man was directly thrown to the bottom of the sea and was cut off into two pieces right from his waist!

The smell of blood quickly spread nearby sea water.

“Not only the sea water is getting colder, but these floating ice pieces are also simultaneously increasing crazily .....”

Ye Feng’s heart shivered for a second, he swept his Soul Search and found that the other two people of Long Clan were already around Long Mo’ran for the protection of their Clan’s head.

It seemed like temporarily he couldn’t kill the opposite party .....

He understood the situation, if he appeared again, then the other two experts of Long Clan would certainly kill him in a twinkling of an eye. Hence for the sake of his own small life, he finally gave up the alluring idea of killing Long Mo’ran now.

His stature moved and rapidly advanced towards the other side, to compete with a heap of people fighting for the big Coral King.

At this time, the big Coral King was still in the hands of an expert of God Fist Gate, who was constantly fleeing towards the seacoast. While the rest of the people were in a great mess behind, blocking each other to let that God Fist Gate’s guy take away the fruit.

Ye Feng simultaneously displayed Invisibility to make himself completely hidden from the eyes of the other people. Afterwards, conveniently, he held a big ice piece to make a shield. Then he swam towards that fellow, all prepared to assassinate him and capture the big Coral King.

However, God Fist Gate’s expert immediately sensed that an ice piece was approaching fast, so very vigilantly, he moved aside to escape it. However, at this instant, Ye Feng suddenly flashed from behind the ice piece and rained numerous punches heavily on his chest!

This sudden attack stunned the opposite party for a moment!

He had never thought that there would be someone hiding behind that ice piece like a ghost in general!

It was not accidental, on the one hand, Ye Feng’s fist hit the opposite

party, while on the other hand, his Zhenqi surged and condensed in his Ancient Dragon Sword Ring.

A golden light flashed.

Puff!

In a flash, the golden Zhenqi sword congealed out and just like how a bean curd was cut, it jabbed into the chest of the opposite party!

Ping!

However, that expert wielded his fist at the point of his death and pounded heavily on Ye Feng's shoulder, his frightening and devastating inner qi all of a sudden smashed Ye Feng's right shoulder thoroughly!

Ye Feng clenched his teeth as he started swimming single-handedly to grab the big Coral King.

“He is that boy!”

The other people immediately realised the change, the underwater searchlights were all of a sudden hit open and illuminated the translucent form of Ye Feng!

## Chapter 182 - Underwater Speed

---

Although these martial artists originally wanted to snatch away the big Coral King from one another, but when the sudden accident occurred, they all united together. Now that the big Coral King was actually taken away by someone else, this group of people could no longer keep patience and in succession, switched on their searchlights.

He was the masked man!

Under the intense light of the searchlights, Ye Feng's translucent body form all of a sudden got exposed in front of people!

Because Ye Feng's shoulder was terribly crushed by the fist of an expert of God Fist Gate, so he was facing little problem in breathing. Besides, since his fresh blood was dripping from his crushed shoulder, hence his Invisibility Technique immediately expired, making his stature half exposed!

"What's the matter with this guy, why does he look like a ghost?"

"He hasn't even worn a diving suit!"

"What's wrong with him, kill him! "

A group of people started talking in whispers, they didn't want to think much, simply advanced towards Ye Feng, all geared up since they wanted to finish him once and for all!

In the icy-cold seabed, all of a sudden a group of hungry tigers advanced towards Ye Feng to kill him, however, he didn't panic a bit, smoothly slipped the big Coral king into his coat together with the other 12 small corals.

Afterwards, just like a fish, he swung his both legs and along with the water current, slid more than ten meters away instantaneously.

His underwater speed was twice faster than other people!

But unfortunately, his shoulder had suffered a severe injury, that last blow had almost cut off his whole right arm, just remaining few muscles of his shoulder were connected together.

This injury greatly impaired his speed. In order to avoid being caught up, he started making distance as soon as possible between him and the others. But now, he was unable to endure any more, hence he waved his left hand and displayed Holy Cure Technique!

Just a moment ago, he had absorbed a small coral to refill his Zhenqi, which got almost exhausted quite soon, but his shoulder was finally fifty percent restored, now at least he could act freely.

Upon seeing that a golden light flashed and then the wound of Ye Feng's shoulder all of a sudden healed up, all the martial artists, who were chasing him, were totally stunned, this kid was too scary, wasn't he?

“Romantic Sword Technique – Sweep away scattered clouds Sword qi!”

Just then, a dull roar spread from behind the crowd, immediately followed by a Sword qi, which rushed splitting the turbulent sea current, directly towards Ye Feng, with an extremely fast speed!

It was Log Mo'ran, after getting protection from other two Long people, finally, he caught up with them. But the moment he saw Ye Feng, immediately launched his favourite Sword qi.

At this instant, Ye Feng swept his Soul Search and after getting the crystal clear picture of the surrounding situation, he decided that he shouldn't continue going towards another side to evade this attack. Hence he finally selected a direction, the deeper he would dive, the darker it would get simultaneously!

The direction that he chose was exactly that place in the sea where a large number of massive ice pieces were floating. In any case, there was the existence of Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique and if he again relied on his Soul Search, then passing such an abyssal environment would be much easier for him.

However, for Long Mo'ran, waiting for someone to reply was a totally different case.

“Damn, doesn't that kid actually court his death?”

The Sword qi of Long Mo'ran was cast aside by the turbulent current, which made his heart burn with anger. He thought that the masked man was a fool because neither had worn a diving suit, nor had any diving equipment, but still dared to come in such a deep-sea environment.

“He is running towards the deeper place.”

The facial expression of Long Clan's expert immediately sank.

“He wants to die, we can't lose the big Coral King. Pursue!”

Long Mo'ran issued an order without a bit of hesitation, at the same time, he coughed up two mouthfuls of blood, however, he still continued pursuing him.

He was gradually getting deeper from the sea surface, besides, the water current also started getting more and more turbulent, accompanied by a sharp decline in the temperature. Now the ice pieces also started showing up more and more, as if they were washed out from some central place.

But still, no one wanted to give up.

Although many of them had already obtained few small corals, but still, a small coral could only promote one's cultivation by two years, while this theory didn't go with the big Coral King.

Soon it seemed that they had actually underestimated the danger and risk of the present seabed. They didn't even go much deeper chasing him, but one unlucky fellow was suddenly drawn into the turbulent whirlpool. Even though he tried to escape but completely failed!

There were several broken ice pieces floating in that whirlpool, which were just like a sharp blade. Shortly after that fellow was curled up, he encountered the torture of being directly cut into pieces and very quickly, was torn into several pieces.

But for Ye Feng, depending upon his Soul Search Technique, he could effectively prevent himself from getting stuck in this turbulent whirlpool, but others couldn't. Even if there were underwater searchlights, but still a naked eye couldn't see an invisible turbulent flow of water!

Ye Feng smoothly submerged deep into the sea, where he passed through several perilous whirlpools one after another, simultaneously avoiding the floating sharp ice pieces, quite smoothly.

But for other martial artists, they were actually trembling with fear and were facing huge difficulty in proceeding further!

Soon, Ye Feng finally spread out from other martial artists.

At this moment, Long Mo'ran looked totally dissatisfied, hence he immediately ordered: "Turn on the jet propeller and pursue!"

"But Clan Head, in such a chaotic seabed using jet propeller, I am afraid, perhaps it's inappropriate ....."

Immediately, one of the experts of Long Clan replied with a bit of hesitation.

The jet propeller was country's one of the best example of science and technology. If it was used in the tranquil sea water, it could increase the speed of movement multiple times. However now in such a disordered seabed, if was used, then a little carelessness from their end occurred and this jet propeller would throw them to the place beyond redemption!

Such as, what if it rushed into a whirlpool and bumped into a sharp ice piece or so on, the risk would enormously increase.

"There is nothing inappropriate. Turn on!"

Long Mo'ran didn't want to think about it logically, immediately he pressed down a button present on his diving suit.

The diving suit which they were using was indeed a high-tech product. Once its button was pressed on, immediately two jets spurted out gas from its bottom and all of a sudden enhanced his speed several times!

On seeing this, the remaining two Long Clan's martial artists looked at



each other helplessly, because now they had to do the same. Once they turned on their jet propeller, their speed also suddenly soared!

Following Ye Feng's route, these three people dashed towards his direction and soon arrived quite closer to him.

"This kid dares to run towards this place, in that case, he must have an assurance. Since we are closely following his route, we shouldn't encounter any danger."

Long Mo'ran's train of thoughts started racing, undoubtedly Ye Feng couldn't be an idiot, just for the sake of this big Coral King, he would put his life on the line. As for Ye Feng's identity, he had now more and more doubts, at the same time, his abilities also somewhat aroused curiosity in Long Moran's heart. He had only ten years of Cultivation, but could still display Sword qi and on top of that, could still play with a group of martial arts experts so easily?

"As long as we seize this masked man, must interrogate and torture him quite well."

He made up his mind, finally at this time, he was less than ten meters away from Ye Feng!

When other martial artists saw him turning on his jet propeller to pursue rapidly, they turned little disappointed, since they didn't have the courage to rush past him.

Eventually, some people started shrinking back, for them the most important thing was even if they pursued him, the big Coral King wouldn't necessarily fall in their hands, so why would they take the risk? Might as well, they should early retreat to ensure their safety, besides, they still had a few small corals, so it wouldn't be considered as a big loss.

Naturally, these small corals must be immediately absorbed once they returned, otherwise, once they were separated from their companion big Coral, their spiritual energy used to immediately start dissipating.

.....

Ye Feng went much deeper and quite soon, was more than 10 kilometres away from the coastline.

At this point of time, finally Long Mo'ran was forced to smile, now he had to admit it after all! Ye Feng didn't just run away while absorbing the spiritual energy of a small coral, but in the meantime, he also treated his shoulder's injury which was now 70-80 percent recovered and then again supplemented his Zhenqi completely.

Any treasure could enhance one's Cultivation only during its first absorption and in the future, could only restore one's Zhenqi. In any case, Ye Feng had several small corals, hence he wasn't afraid of using it, after all, he must give priority to his life.

While Long Mo'ran was pursuing him, suddenly an idea hit his mind.

Shua!

Ye Feng didn't think anything, immediately the golden sword emerged out in his hand as he turned around, at the same time, Beheading Dragon Sword qi surged up violently and suddenly, quite forcefully rushed towards Long Mo'ran!

## Chapter 183 - An Extremely Cold Ice Wall

---

The icy-blue Sword qi, splitting open the turbulent flow of water, rapidly moved towards Long Mo'ran's face.

“Clan Head!”

The other two experts of Long Clan saw that and immediately exclaimed aloud. They clearly knew that just recently, his chest had suffered a heavy injury, so it would be certainly difficult for him to block this Sword qi!

However, on the other side, Long Mo'ran was all determined to save his face, so he thought that while facing a youngster if he dodged his blow, wouldn't he look very pathetic?

He didn't want to let that happen, hence quickly started condensing his inner qi in the hollow of his both palms, and the next moment, Gentle Palm Technique, first style – Cloud Arrangement! At first, he released his inner qi from his body, then instantly condensed it into the form of a rich Palm qi and finally, bravely welcomed the icy-blue Sword qi.

Buzz!

A muffled sound, accompanied with the arousing layers of waves, swept all around as the Palm qi and Sword qi collided with each other and instantly set off an intense mighty wave!

The place where the collision took place, right from there a formation of whirlpool immediately started. Its volume was much bigger and it instantly took the form of a bloody whirlpool!

Ye Feng didn't stay there any further second, his body moved and he started proceeding forward!

But under such circumstances, Long Mo'ran along with other two people quickly closed his jet propeller. They hesitated a bit because the

collision, which had taken place between inner qi and Zhenqi, had led to the formation of a turbulent whirlpool, making them withdraw at once.

Unfortunately, if they got stuck into it, that would be certainly the end of their lives!

A natural barrier suddenly turned these three people totally unable to follow Ye Feng furthermore. Besides, it would be definitely like courting death if they still continue pursuing him in this dangerous seabed.

“Go back, inform everyone, mobilise the strength of the common people, begin the coastal search, I don’t believe that he will stay hiding in the sea forever and will never come out!

Long Mo’ran was also a quite decisive person, seeing that things didn’t go as per his speculation, immediately made the most appropriate decision.

Afterwards, the three people turned around and departed.

Once again they passed through the hellish kind of treacherous seabed and then quickly returned to the shore, where they straightaway took out the reward they harvested just now and found that altogether they had obtained seven small corals.

Unfortunately, Long Mo’ran was in a severely injured state, because he had been smashed by an expert of God Fist Gate, causing a severe blood clot in his chest. But the things didn’t stop here, later on, while blocking Ye Feng’s blow, the internal injuries of his chest got worsened, making him a bit more critical.

After reaching the shore, when they looked around, then noticed that several people had also successively landed not far from the coast. Originally, altogether twelve martial artists had entered the sea, however, only seven people could return alive.

While the rest five people were buried in the seabed.

But interestingly, not all martial artists had stepped into the sea to compete for the big Coral King, instead few of them had some grudges, so they just wanted to take advantage of this opportunity and use ruthless

methods in the bottom of the sea.

In contrast, Long Clan didn't have any deceased person, so it had been regarded as an unusually lucky clan.

“Mo'ran, it's a little strange, but that young boy?”

In a somewhat distressed state, a white-bearded old man also arose from the shallow water. He was that Nandou God Fist, Xu Xiaoyu of God Fist Gate.

“Died.”

Long Mo'ran coldly swept his eyes around, directing his people to leave at once. He was gravely injured by a martial artist of God Fist Gate, so naturally Xu Xiaoyu couldn't have any favourable impression for him.

Xu Xiaoyu looked at Long Moran's back while thinking that big Coral King didn't seem to be with them.

Were the big Coral King and the masked kid got buried together in the seabed?

He turned around to look towards the sea surface, still, waves were surging violently one after another. It seemed like this nasty weather would last forever and still, nobody knew what matter had led to such a perilous and unusual weather.

Obviously, he also knew that the NSA had already started a thorough investigation of this matter, but it looked like it didn't have any prospect.

Should he attempt to have a look again?

He considered for a moment, then turned around and walked towards the northern direction. He must go back to the central zone of Xiangshan County, in order to take a rest, then after could make a new plan.

The weather of the East China Sea suddenly got nastier, perhaps there would be some other treasure taking birth somewhere. Moreover, on seeing this intensity, it seemed like the treasure would be much precious than the big Coral King! If he could investigate it, then could get his hand on it for sure.

.....

Ye Feng eventually got rid of Long Mo'ran and other two Long people but still kept moving ahead constantly under the water.

He wanted to go forward deeper into the sea to examine why the weather had turned so nastier, that way he might suddenly bump into Su Feiying, it couldn't be better than this.

Now that he didn't have any pursuing troop, he was much relaxed. Only this kind of strange seabed environment was something intriguing him and was totally inconceivable for him. In the World of the Immortals, there used to have hundred times greater danger all over if compared with this current weather. Even he along with Su Feiying had experienced this kind of weather a lot of times there.

He went further into the deep sea, water was gradually getting colder, while the entire sea was covered with frost. At this time, small ice sludges also started showing up. Even though he was in the water, but his sensitivity completely failed to avoid them and soon was suddenly smashed by one of them, causing a terrible burning pain.

From time to time, much bigger ice pieces, like a several-storied building, started hitting him similarly like before. Now he really needed to do something in advance so that he could avoid such large ice pieces. At this moment, he suddenly noticed a building-sized ice piece rushed far away and then was broken into several pieces by the turbulent current.

Because of those broken pieces, the deep sea water was entirely covered with several sharp knives. Now the seabed might be called as the place of death.

However, he still kept on moving ahead and once again got hit directly on his face. Ultimately he was compelled by the circumstances to use that technique which he had never used so far. Immediately his Zhenqi rushed outside his body and condensed into a form of Protective Shield, to block the attack of these ice sludges.

This kind of Protective Shield used to consume enormous Zhenqi, therefore it couldn't be pulled for a long time. If Ye Feng's Cultivation

would be higher later, then could easily display this Immortal Technique with certainly much better effect than the current one. What a pity, he hadn't yet reached that level.

As he was moving ahead, was getting more and more far from the coastline, 20 kilometres, 30 kilometres .....

Finally after swimming more than 30 kilometres, suddenly something appeared within the range of his Soul Search which was there right in front of him, beyond 100 meters. Just like a sudden appearance of a monster, the entire seabed was actually blocked by an ice wall, right in his front!

Unconsciously, he arrived at that position which had been actually detected by the NSA and that location was nearly 20 nautical miles away.

An iceberg island in front of him!

That was a spectacular picture, even he was taken aback. He had never thought that on this planet, in such a modern city, he would run into such a stirring scene. Besides, he must know that this place was neither the North Pole nor the South Pole, but still there was the existence of such a giant-sized iceberg island.

An extremely cold ice wall was lying in front of him, blocking his way. In the dark seabed, this ice wall was exuding a shallow white light, making the surrounding sea area look like a wonderland.

Besides, he noticed that there weren't many fishes in the whole sea area, definitely, the sudden change in the weather would have forced them to leave this place.

The intuition of animals had always been much sharper than humans.

The entire ice wall, which had grown from the bottom of the deep sea, was just like an iron bucket, which had encircled the particular sea area. Standing tall above the sea level, it constituted an intriguing iceberg island.

In fact, this was not an island but a layer of the ice shell.

Interestingly, a layer of its mysterious energy not only had blocked the satellite detection of the NSA but had also blocked Ye Feng's Soul Search detection range, making him totally unable to know what could be there inside the layer of this thick ice wall.

“Beheading Dragon Sword qi!”

Since he had again absorbed a small coral, hence he didn't hesitate to make an effort to cut off this ice wall by his sword.

However, the real strength his Sword qi had before, he couldn't use that in this condition. But still, the might of the present Sword qi couldn't be overlooked. When his icy-blue Sword qi hit the ice wall, it could actually only create a fist-sized small hole on the ice wall.

Quite soon, a very cold air passed from inside the ice wall and supplemented the small hole, the restoration speed of which was extremely fast!

“This a little resembles like .....”

Ye Feng's heart moved a beat as he thought of some kind of a possibility.



## Chapter 184 - Star Arrow

---

There was the legend in the World of the Immortals that there, towards the extreme north, there was the existence of a rare holy treasure, a thousand years old thick and mysterious ice.

That was genuinely the most precious treasure in the whole world, but it also had the sense of self-awareness! Whenever it used to suffer the invasion of an outsider Immortal Cultivator, it used to immediately take the initiative to release a layer of a very cold ice wall, to block the attack.

At present, Ye Feng encountered the similar situation, which implanted some doubts in his mind. The things which were the legend in the Immortals' World, why were they actually, continually appearing on the earth? Moreover, it also didn't appear in the extreme north.

A thousand years of mysterious ice, which contained the strength of inexhaustible mysterious ice and which gradually took this mighty form after going through a thousand years of a time period, was indeed incredible. The first time absorption of this thing could enhance one's Cultivation by at least ten years and then, it could also very rapidly self-restore its spiritual energy. If Ye Feng could recognise it as the thousand years of mysterious ice, then could also provide other people to absorb.

It was said that in the Immortals' World, towards the extreme north, there was a great martial arts sect, called Town Faction and the treasure they had was the same a thousand years old mysterious ice. Because of that, each of its elite disciples had ten years of Cultivation from the beginning!

This was very unfair there, but the same thing also happened on the earth. Looking at the family ground on the earth, it could be seen that handful of people were the children of extremely rich entrepreneurs and so on, while the maximum number of people had to start from the beginning, right from scratch. In case they didn't work hard, then were

doomed to live in wretched poverty throughout their lives.

Two separate worlds had astonishing similarity, it was just that in the Immortals' World, there were abundant of plunders.

“If it is really the thousand years of mysterious ice, then it must be extraordinary .....

Ye Feng's heart was in huge shock, this area certainly needed a thorough investigation!

Naturally, depending on his present strength, he could never break this ice wall, in addition, his meridians could only withstand maximum thirteen years of Cultivation. Although he had the big Coral King right now, but couldn't absorb it, otherwise, there was a great possibility that his meridians couldn't contain it and might burst. It was indeed a sad reminder for him.

“I should return to make Wan'er absorb it and attain fifteen years of Cultivation. Then after, she can practice Star Arrow depending on the intelligence of her body of Immortal arteries, then I guess she should be able to break open this ice wall.”

Star Arrow was one of the Immortal Techniques of Star Tomb Sect, which needed just fifteen years of Cultivation to begin practising it.

After the absorption of the strength of group stars, it used to condense and turn into the Starlight Arrow, the penetrating power of which was extremely vigorous! If the absorption was carried out for a longer period, then one could attain enormous power, even at 15 years of Cultivation, one could display techniques possessing strength equivalent to a hundred years of Cultivation's blow.

In the Immortals' World, this technique wouldn't have much use, because, in the battle, one could never give time to his opponent to gather power. Even in the case of sneak attack, one could get easily found by the opponent before he could complete his absorption process. And the most critical point was once this technique started to gather the strength, it couldn't change the direction of its emission.

“It will save almost fifty percent of the time, breaking this ice wall shouldn’t be a problem.

After making a perfect plan, Ye Feng turned around at once and rushed through the water to return.

The longest time needed by Star Arrow to gather the strength was just half an hour, within this period it could absorb enough power of the stars, allowing its might and penetrating power to reach their maximum limit. However, if it didn’t execute the instant release of the gathered strength, then its power couldn’t be compared with Beheading Dragon Sword qi.

To defeat this ice wall, which was a kind of a fixed target, Star Arrow was an excellent choice.

He swam all the way back to the shore, his stature was still nimble and resourceful and didn’t meet any accident all along. Besides, in the seabed, he also coincidentally encountered a corpse and picked up two small corals from him. Perhaps after getting separated from the big Coral, the spiritual energy of these two small corals had already been very much depleted.

The big Coral King and small corals belonged to the associated relationship, if separated with each other, then couldn’t preserve their spiritual energy after a certain time.

Ye Feng could feel that the spiritual energy of the big Coral King was also dissipating gradually, just like the previous half Lingshi in general.

“Before in the World of the Immortals, I had never heard such a strange material treasure, it seems like, on this planet, there are really lots of treasure everywhere.”

Ye Feng thought: “Once this matter is settled, then probably I can walk everywhere, the harvest is certainly not small.”

He relieved the effect of Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique, embarked on the shore and immediately displayed Invisibility once again. Soon he discovered that in the woods nearby shore, there were

several martial artists in an ambush, on seeing their attires, it seemed that they belonged to a particular martial arts sect.

“Hehe, you just wait, elder brother won’t accompany you to play.”

Ye Feng smiled, then noiselessly he passed through the woods without getting found by anyone!

He continued proceeding ahead and soon returned to the village where he had taken shelter along with his people before. At this moment, when he swept his Soul Search Technique around, then suddenly narrowed his eyes and thought that did this place actually had so many people around even before?

Interesting!

.....

At this very moment, on the other side, Thunder was actually leading the NSA squad to enter the raging waves of the deadly sea.

Even their sophisticated speed boats were unable to pass through the intense mighty waves region, to at least get even a half step close to that iceberg island . As a matter of great importance, Thunder had already applied to the Navy to mobilise 052 missile cruisers to help them.

Now they could only wait for them near the shore.

Thunder tightly frowned because such strange weather had never occurred during his whole term of office, neither he knew what exactly happened after all.

Fortunately, the coastline wasn’t affected by it, might be because the scope of that iceberg island would have stopped expanding, making Thunder feel a little relieved. After all, his primary goal was to ensure the safety of his country’s people and property.

“Captain Thunder, please receive the latest news.”

At this time, a dignified voice suddenly spread from his intercom : “Not long ago the military base probed into the military port city of the US to check the movement, most likely they are interested in this strange and

giant appearance, must be prepared in advance! ”

“Yes, understood.”

Thunder’s complexion suddenly turned solemn.

Sure enough, this sort of matter couldn’t stay hidden from the military power across the Pacific Ocean.

The Iceberg Island was located within the scope of the territorial water of China, so opposite party definitely couldn’t dare to blatantly break in. Nevertheless, he must be prepared ahead of time, so as to avoid being caught off guard at that time.

.....

The seashore small village, in a multistoried building.

When Ye Feng left the village, Long Wan’er couldn’t remain peaceful for so long, consequently displayed Soul Search Technique all around and discovered that several people were sneaking in the forest which was not far from the small hill.

At first, she did not care and thought that these people came over here accidentally.

However, quite soon, she found the goal of the opposite party!

Because of Soul Search Technique, she could now also hear the conversation of the opposite party even from quite a distance. When those bludgers were talking, they were frequently mentioning “mask” “a man and a woman” and some other related words, making her instantly understand what the goal of the opposite party was, it was she and Ye Feng!

All of a sudden she recalled that in the morning when they were departing from the hotel, at that time they had encountered a sumptuous youth, wearing a dog-shaped ancient jade.

When she heard them chatting, talking about what Wang Shaodong wanted them to do “Kill the masked man and throw him into the sea” she turned angry.

Wasn't he kicked in the hotel, then what was this killing and then throwing into the sea all about?

She wanted to teach them a good lesson right away!

But very quickly, she repressed her impulsion to run out alone.

Because when she swept her Soul Search in other directions, then found that there actually appeared another strange person not far away from their building! That person was a man, wearing a black windproof coat. On looking at his appearance, it seemed that he was a foreigner. In this dreary rustling wind, he stood alone on the hilltop, carrying a small-sized crossbow arrow behind his back, overall was looking extremely mystical.

Who was that?

Long Wan'er neither knew that person, nor wanted to take any risk, hence immediately called Shu Shu and Nan Fang and started discussing with them.

"He is an exorcist!"

Nan Fang went upstairs, heard the description given by Long Wan'er and suddenly his complexion changed. It was clear that he was indeed a mysterious foreigner who was simultaneously very dreadful!

## Chapter 185 - An Exorcist

---

When Ye Feng returned, immediately swept his Soul Search and found that Long Wan'er together with other two people was upstairs. Probably they were discussing someone's appearance, while that Taiji Palace's youth was still in the deep slumber.

In addition, there were also five young hooligans present in that building's courtyard, who were trying to cross the courtyard's walls to enter the house.

"Just inform Wang Shao, he will have to quickly bring people over here, before then, let's handle this matter efficiently!"

"Boss, you really want to kill him?"

"Nonsense, at present this area is already under the effect of this dangerous tidal wave, we just have to kill him and throw him into the sea, that's all. Do you even know the reward Wang Shao is offering us on the completion of this task? It's one million! If we divide this sum equally among us, each one would have a share of 200,000. So we must kill that fellow maintaining complete secrecy so that no one can discover .....

The fact was Wang Shaodong had actually offered two million to the boss but more than one million was swallowed by him.

For this kind of small punks of Xiangshan County, not to mention two million, even two lakhs were more than enough to make them work to death!

Ye Feng didn't come forward because for him, these small bludgers were not worth paying attention. Even though these five had iron rods in their hands, still they could never be Long Mo'ran's opponents.

He simply hid outside the building as he just wanted to see how Long Wan'er would deal with them. Besides, he also discovered another person

with a mysterious appearance and unique personality.

That mysterious person was the same man clad in a black windproof coat, carrying a small-sized crossbow arrow behind, apparently had a quite trendy appearance. He was just standing alone on the hilltop, drenching in the pouring rain but still he actually didn't even slightly wrinkle his brows.

“Who is this fellow?”

Ye Feng didn't take the initiative to come forward, although he could sense using his Soul Search that the man was not a martial artist, but had a dangerous aura around him. Confronting such an unknown and strange person, he thought that better he should tighten his guard.

Again he swept around and heard the conversation going on in the building, as per that it seemed that Nan Fang had actually recognized this guy, then, they played a clever game and decided to let Long Wan'er deal with them first then they would think about any other thing.

By this time, those five punks, holding iron rods, had already sneaked into the building. By passing through the icy-cold water up to their knees, trembling all the way, they finally set foot on the stairs leading to the second floor.

However suddenly from upstairs “bang, bang” sound echoed twice, as if something was broken into pieces. Then, one by one, the pieces of glass raided those five on the staircase!

In the utter darkness of the damp corridor, those five were using flashlights, so they immediately saw those glass pieces approaching but actually had no enough time to react. Consequently, various large and small pieces of glass jabbed into their bodies, immediately leading to pitiful screams and yells from all direction!

It was Nan Fang's hand which threw these glass pieces.

He had just learnt Crying Ghost Blade Technique but since he didn't have a flying blade at that moment, hence could only break two beer bottles to use the fragments of its glass as flying knife.



The martial arts techniques and Immortal Techniques were quite different because to practice an Immortal Technique, Cultivation was essentially required. However, until now, Ye Feng hadn't seen anything proving that the martial arts also needed Cultivation for practising it.

As long as there was a martial arts book and inner qi inside, one could practice!

It was just that how the martial arts techniques could display their effect, even though they were closely related to Cultivation. At present Nan Fang's Cultivation was very low, that was the reason why the might of the glass fragments thrown by him was just slightly more than the average person.

But still, that was sufficient enough to make these five small punks pee in their pants in terror.

“Lying trough! That boy is there, upstairs!”

“Boss, my leg has been hit by a bullet!”

“You piece of a shit! Quickly take something to block his attack!”

These people endured the pain caused by the glass fragments and decided to go all the way to the end just because of the share of 2 lakhs! They went downstairs, lifted a table before their bodies like a shield and then, like a turtle, went upstairs slowly, quite cautiously.

After being pierced by the fragments of glass, they were constantly bleeding, however, they didn't a bit care about it, because the 2 lakhs was glittering before their eyes and was constantly invoking them.

However, they barely arrived upstairs and suddenly heard a young girl's loud voice, immediately followed by a strong kick, which heavily hit the table they had lifted.

A burst of crazy fierce strength passed through the table and hit those five, making them suddenly roll down the staircase. That kick was purposely thrown to heavily injure them so that they couldn't prop up right away.

This was actually Long Wan'er's shot, although now she had transformed into an Immortal Cultivator, but was still quite familiar with her Long Clan's Dragon Leg Technique. In case she used Dragon Tail Technique right now, then these five hooligans would be knocked out straight away.

“Get lost.”

At this moment, a cold voice spread from the downstairs, it was actually Ye Feng who finally walked inside the building, picked up those five punks and threw them out of the courtyard directly into the icy-cold water which had inundated to their knees' height.

These kind of small punks were actually not a threat, so Ye Feng didn't want to kill them and dirty his own hands. Just now, how badly they were hit by Nan Fang and then immediately after, got kicked by Long Wan'er really hard. Because of these back to back attacks, they were really seriously injured.

“Ye Feng.”

At this time, Long Wan'er suddenly noticed that Ye Feng had finally returned, making her feel pleasantly surprised and she immediately ran down the stairs towards him.

When Ye Feng was in the Immortals' world, he often used to completely shield himself so that other's Soul Search couldn't detect him, therefore, just now, Long Wan'er also couldn't sense him.

“First come up, I have to discuss a matter with you.”

Ye Feng smiled as he spread his hands and swoop her up in his bosom. When the aroma of her body reached his nose, it made him have a kind of warm feeling.

“Hmm.”

Long Wan'er nodded, then embraced his neck and held him tight and close.

Ye Feng was helpless, he had to embrace her to go upstairs. At this

time, Shu Shu and Nan Fang were in a bedroom, arranging a candle. Since the tide struck the house, therefore now it didn't have the electricity, so they could only use candles for lighting.

On seeing Ye Feng, holding Long Wan'er, suddenly walked in, Shu Shu covered her mouth and smiled : "Sit quickly, how was everything, you didn't get hurt, right?"

"It's nothing."

Ye Feng shook his head, the broken bone he had on his shoulder due to the punch had already been almost treated by him. Although he still had a lingering pain there, but it didn't affect his motion at all.

For this kind of wound, Holy Cure Technique was enough to treat it easily. However, in the World of the Immortals, there used to have several categories of wounds, such as wounds caused by mysterious ice Zhenqi, lava Zhenqi, the strength of stars and the like, which certainly couldn't be cured by this Holy Cure Technique.

"Nan Fang, who is that guy outside wearing a black windproof coat?"

Ye Feng entered the room and immediately asked Nan Fang about this.

"An exorcist, he is a global killer who has already made his entry in the list of world's top 100 experts and is also one of the members of Viper Organization."

Nan Fang's tone dignified as he said.

"Viper?"

Ye Feng gawked.

"Elder brother Ye, I have something important to say."

Nan Fang said: "Since you are the masked man Mo Jiuge and during your last trip, that dark-skinned sniper you had killed outside the highway, he was actually one of the members of Viper. This is an international killer organisation who recruits a lot of experts and this exorcist is the gold medal killer of Viper!"

"Why does he appear here?"

Ye Feng wrinkled his eyebrows.

“If I guess right, his goal is you, Ye elder brother.”

Nan Fang was very affirmative as he said: “Viper has lost its precious man because of you and naturally this gathering place will attract their attention .....

“Is he powerful?”

Long Wa’ner, while letting herself completely melt in Ye Feng’s arms, asked an important question.

Nan Fang heard that and immediately smiled bitterly: “Regarding his strength, I am not clear, but it is said that once he received a task to come to this country China and kill the then notorious and most wanted criminal of the martial arts world, Xingchen Xueren!”

“What, Xingchen Xueren, but he had 40 years of Cultivation, so this fellow actually turned out to be that guy .....

Long Wan’er covered her mouth and called out in alarm all of a sudden.

However, right at this moment, Ye Feng and Long Wan’er simultaneously realized that stood in the black windproof coat outside on the hilltop, that exorcist suddenly started moving quite fast towards their building!

## Chapter 186 - A Fierce Battle In The Rainy Night

---

The moment that exorcist set out, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er immediately sensed his movement.

"Get ready, you protect your Aunt, Nan Fang, you just play it by ear and let me deal with him."

Ye Feng promptly arrived in front of Long Wan'er and Shu Shu to shield them, then, while facing towards the balcony, said that holding a dignified expression.

"I am with you."

Long Wan'er tenaciously leant on him by completely ignoring his order.

"I can also help."

Nan Fang again picked up two beer bottles.

"I can also."

Shu Shu also weakly raised a kitchen knife.

"....."

Neither Ye Feng could speak anything, nor had enough time to persuade. By now, that exorcist had already arrived at the courtyard outside the building, afterwards, he leapt gently and sprang up under the rainy night. Soon a figure wearing a black coat appeared on the balcony of the room where everyone was gathered!

Taking advantage of the weak candlelight, Shu Shu and Nan Fang immediately looked at him and finally saw his appearance. Since they didn't have Soul Search Technique, hence they could only helplessly listen to the description given by Long Wan'er and Ye Feng.

"It's really him, Nigusi Ding."

Nan Fang's complexion sank as he confirmed the identity of the

opposite party.

“Sir, what brings you here?”

Ye Feng stood in front of those three, then raised his head facing the balcony and asked from Nigusi Ding, the exorcist.

“Gu la gua la?”

He had a very large hat on his head which had completely covered his face, making people unable to see him clearly. Besides, the words he just spoke were a series of French words!

Ye Feng heard him and suddenly felt like a stupid, although he had taken Su Menghan's help before in his studies, because of which now he could somewhat understand English, but French, he certainly couldn't understand a bit! This was just excellent, now how could they communicate?

At this time, Long Wan'er opened her mouth and delicately spoke a series of fluent French words, which was as sweet and melodious as an oriole's song, indeed an extremely pleasant voice!

She could actually speak French!

All of a sudden, Ye Feng was dumbfounded at this sight, in addition, this also went against the heaven's will, how could a martial artist be like this?

“Idiot, keeping pace with the times, understood?”

Long Wan'er said that as she quietly pinched him and softly explained everything to him: “He is asking you that do you want to join Viper organisation? The person you have killed some time ago was the member of his organisation, so unless you join them, they will continuously keep trying to chase you down.”

Join Viper?

Ye Feng heard this and abruptly burst out laughing, this really was a good idea, but unfortunately, he didn't have even the slightest bit of interest to be a killer. Obviously, he knew that in this kind of huge

international killer organisation, there should have some extremely strict rules and regulations, hence once joined, it would become very difficult to come out of its clutch.

“You tell him that I still like to live a bit freely.”

Ye Feng said in a lower voice.

Such a straightforward refusal, so that meant the opposite party was probably about to launch his attack to obliterate him, right?

Very obviously Long Wan'er also thought so, therefore as she opened her mouth, simultaneously loosened Ye Feng's arm, since she didn't want to become a burden in this fight.

When Nigusi Ding heard her reply, then smiled in a very soft voice. His voice was very delicate which made it seem like he should be an under 30 years old young man. At this moment, he extended his white arm, immediately pressed his black hat and suddenly a cold wind rushed toward Ye Feng!

“A hidden weapon?”

Ye Feng was already alert all along, hence he immediately responded. He waved his hand and the golden sword light flashed, “Shua” and instantly blocked the hidden weapon thrown by him, simultaneously made it fly!

This was a similar bullet-like small-sized silver drill bit, which was actually hidden in his hat. If it was used to kill an ordinary person, then absolutely no one could escape it.

Unfortunately, the person he met was Ye Feng.

“Oh?”

Nigusi Ding was slightly surprised, even he couldn't see it clearly, then, how Ye Feng could block his silver drill which had been projected by him!

That small silver drill bit was originally obscured, so seeing it under such a dark night should be even more difficult. Although there was a

candle lit in the room, but still, how could an ordinary martial artist respond to it that fast?

In other words, did this boy have the accurate intuition of and judgment on the danger in advance?

Such a person, he hadn't encountered this kind of experience ever throughout his previous assassination tasks. However, he didn't know that the thing Ye Feng relied on was not intuitive prejudgment, but was the Soul Search Technique!

Whoosh!

A burst of cold wind rushed in from outside the window and blew out the candle, suddenly turning the whole room pitch-dark to the extent where a person couldn't even see his five fingers.

In this utter darkness, both Nan Fang and Shu Shu were suddenly totally blinded. In such a terrorizing atmosphere, they didn't dare to leave, instead were just anxiously standing in-situ as if were glued to the spot.

"You stay here to protect Aunt and Nan Fang."

Ye Feng leant close to Long Wan'er's ear and said softly. Immediately after, he displayed Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace and rushed towards Nigusi Ding with an extremely fast speed.

Long Wan'er couldn't dare to be negligent, hence she didn't urge to follow him, instead, she moved a bit and stood in front of Shu Shu and Nan Fang, in order to shield them.

Whistling!

Ye Feng instantaneously arrived in front of him and pounded a punch, but actually, his punch hit in the air because the speed of the exorcist was similarly extremely quick. Immediately that man jumped out of the balcony and stood above the front door of the building's courtyard, in the pouring rain.

"His movement is really agile."



Ye Feng sneered secretly because he had already noticed that his battle efficiency was totally dependent on something and that was .....

Equipment.

This fellow's entire body was covered with several high-tech equipment, including his foot shoes, the small crossbow behind, his black windproof coat as well as a black hat, all these products were being repeatedly used by him in this fight, indeed he was heavily armed!

His equipment was exquisite and if it was compared with the NSA soldiers' weapons, then obviously his equipment was more elegant but relatively less destructive.

In order to kill his assigned target, his all heavy weapons were unnecessary, because he only used to use short silver needles which were hidden in his hat. Since he was also called the exorcist, so definitely had the strength to kill the demons and ghosts.

After wearing those boots, his jump was splendid! The silver drill which he had hidden in his hat, using that he had been able to kill his targets in one fell swoop and had solved his majority of cases like this.

In addition, he was also a killer, that small crossbow machine behind his back, that was a specifically designed exorcising arrow to deal with the martial artists as well as demons and ghosts!

Zi Zi!

The exorcist's arms stretched out, immediately two iron ropes fled from his cuff and advanced towards Ye Feng with an extremely fast speed as if wanted to strangle him tightly.

At this instant, all of a sudden Ye Feng was struck by a brainwave, making him drop the thought of dodging it, on the contrary, he jumped in the air and moved forward to welcome it!

Puff, suddenly two iron ropes entangled his both hands and feet. This scene was also sensed by Long Wan'er, who was at present in the building and this made her totally startled, could it be that Ye Feng did this deliberately?

“Zi Zi.”

Nigusi Ding smiled coldly as he firmly held Ye Feng under his control using his iron ropes, while the small crossbow machine had already been bitten in his mouth, all prepared to pull the trigger!

This small crossbow machine was certainly like a nightmare for the martial arts world. It must be very effective once it hit its target, besides, if compared with the NSA's precision guns, his equipment was way better, since it made Ye Feng's whole body extremely weak at once.

Unfortunately, Ye Feng was far quicker than him.

“Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation!”

Although his both hands and feet were tied up, but he didn't fluster, merely opened his mouth and spurted a fireball from his mouth, which swept across immediately!

The exorcist's complexion suddenly enormously changed, although he wanted to quickly jump aside, but actually, Ye Feng's both hands, which were tied with his iron ropes, pulled him back. Originally he wanted to tie Ye Feng with his iron ropes, however now, actually he was indirectly tied to them, making him see his own death approaching fast.

Bang!

Instantaneously he became a fireball.

## Chapter 187 - Plundering Equipment

---

A fierce battle, in the rainy night, ended within a moment.

Ye Feng actually puffed out a fireball and exterminated a tough opponent again in a flash!

Long Wan'er and Nan Fang had already seen him spouting fireballs before, so they were not very much surprised, rather were secretly relieved. However when Shu Shu looked from afar that Ye Feng spouted a fireball from his mouth, that sent shiver down her spine and her pretty face all of a sudden turned paled.

After all who was this guy Ye Feng, how could he spout a fireball? Shu Shu knew that there had never been such a strange martial artist in the entire martial arts world!

Two long and slender iron ropes, which had connected Ye Feng with Nigusi Ding, were suddenly grabbed by Ye Feng with his both hands and then, he pulled them forcefully, making the body of Nigusi Ding immediately flung into the sea water.

“Puff”, the raging fire which had completely engulfed the exorcist's body, immediately got extinguished. Immediately after, Ye Feng raised his hands and with the help of connecting wire ropes, pulled his body into the building.

Then he immediately loosened his hands and like a previous vertical leap, he jumped into the courtyard.

Bang!

Instantaneously, his golden sword congealed out and killed those five dumbfounded young punks in a flash.

Originally, Ye Feng also wanted to put them a way out, but hadn't expected that in the process of fighting, he would accidentally display a

fireball and the worst part of it, it would be actually seen by these punks. So now, he could no longer leave them alive.

Anyway, the main goal of those five was to kill Ye Feng and toss him into the sea, hence Ye Feng didn't mind following their way and finish them up in a shot.

In order to kill a person, one had to kill one's consciousness first!

His Zhenqi immediately dissipated, then he set his foot into the cold water, soon a layer of surging waves arrived and washed away the corpses of those five. In such an unending rainstorm, the mighty waves were showing their power from time to time, therefore he believed that their corpses would be submerged by the tide soon.

Even if their bodies were found, still no one could find Ye Feng was behind this massacre.

Afterwards, he returned to the building and directly went upstairs. But the moment he entered in the room, his eyes went wide open and he couldn't help but smile. He had just pulled Nigusi Ding's corpse inside the room and in a twinkling of an eye, not only Nan Fang had quickly lit a candle, but had also started digging up the equipment from the exorcist body.

Although this guy was burned to death, but his equipment was of best quality!

Especially his shoes and that fine iron small crossbow machine with seven small arrows. Even if he spent tens of millions, still couldn't buy these top notch stuffs!

“This is the electric powered bouncing boots, which can be used after being filled with the electricity and then it sharply increases the person's jumping ability more than three times! As for this crossbow machine, it can shoot only seven times, but at the critical moment, it will be of great use.....”

Nan Fang analysed them quickly, as for other stuff, they were already burnt and destroyed by Ye Feng's fireball.

“You take these two things with yourself.”

Ye Feng waved his hand: “If there is nothing important left, then this is the time to pack this fellow off.

Originally he had pulled his body inside because he wanted to see if there is any useful equipment he had which could be plundered, surprisingly Nan Fang’s behavior exactly matched his idea. Since everything was already buttoned up, so now he should let his body be washed away just like what happened with those five punks.

“No, all other equipment has become useless, moreover there is anything which can be of great use to us.”

Nan Fang shook his head and smiled while carrying the electric powered bouncing boots in his hand and the small crossbow machine, it had become his favorite now.

Plundering from the hands of Nigusi Ding, which was something he had never dared to think of, but before Ye Feng, this thing was actually so simple and easy.

“Wan’er, haven’t you made a mistake?”

Shu Shu pulled her close and said in a whispering tone: “Who was this Nigusi Ding, didn’t you just say that he had once killed the most wanted criminal, Xingchen Xueren who had forty years of Cultivation? So literary speaking, based on your statement, it seems that he was very strong, but then how was he got killed by Ye Feng so easily ..... ”

“He is not an ordinary person.”

Long Wan’er slightly squinted as she said, however she didn’t disclose Ye Feng’s identity as an Immortal Cultivator.

“Wan’er, Nan Fang, come over here.”

Ye Feng entered the room after dealing with the corpse, now this was the time to give an account for something : “Absorb this because a while later, there is a matter I need you to manage.”

He took out the big Coral King and by lending the light of the candle,

presented it in front of everyone, which was just like a pair of antlers, flashing exotic radiance in the darkness.

“This is ..... the big Coral King?”

Long Wan'er was suddenly thunderstruck, she felt that the spiritual energy from the big Coral was continually spreading, which was simply unbelievable.

This treasure could upgrade one's Cultivation by at least five years at one fell swoop. But why was it presented before her like this? That meant Ye Feng had finally succeeded in obtaining the big Coral King!

“Well, this matter should not be delayed, come on, hold it quickly and start absorbing it.”

Ye Feng said that as he tossed the big Coral in her hands.

This sight stunned her even more and made her totally speechless, but still somewhat helplessly she said : “What am I supposed to do?”

“Giving you to promote your Cultivation, idiot.”

He smiled and gently patted her head: “My meridians are not strong enough to withstand it, so I can't absorb it.”

At this moment, she simply wanted to cry out, such a precious thing it was, but still Ye Feng wanted to give it to her?

This could, however, enhance her Cultivation by five years!

In the martial arts world, Cultivation was always placed at the first important position by everyone, even a married couple used to suffer huge hardships and there were handful of them who could think of giving such precious things to the other party.

“Hurry up, don't waste time.”

Ye Feng moved close to her ear and smilingly said: “If you want to thank me, then later in the evening, display a good performance.”

These words fell and her face turned bright red, while her heart secretly criticised her: “A big pervert.”

However this way, she didn't hesitate a bit, instead made a little speculation since she already had an idea that Ye Feng would definitely explain things to her a while later which would be very important. Hence, she didn't dare to waste any further second, immediately held the big Coral and sat down cross-legged to start the absorption process.

Her core Dan immediately started revolving and gradually the rich spiritual energy started transforming into Zhenqi. However at this time, probably there wouldn't be that sort of hurricane tornado again in this small fishing village, besides that scene was extremely rare which could appear only in the specific circumstances.

As for her Cultivation, she started promoting it with steady steps!

The time she had involved in practicing the martial arts was much longer than Ye Feng's, because of which her meridians had already been broadened enough to accommodate more than 20 years of Cultivation, so she wasn't a bit afraid of absorption.

“Nan Fang, this is for you, absorb it.”

He pulled out a small coral and flung it towards him.

However the thing that made Ye Feng a little grieved was the spiritual energy of these small corals, which had already depleted up to 50 percent, now the effect didn't remain as good as before. But whatever the outcome would be, it could still help Nan Fang enhance his Cultivation.

Again he pulled out a small coral and threw it towards Shu Shu.

Irrespective of what the size of the coral would be, it could be absorbed once. In other words, Long Wan'er could be one time able to enhance her Cultivation by six or seven years!

As for Shu Shu .....

“Wan'er, after this process, could you teach Aunt the core technique of Long Clan.”

Ye Feng said that holding a cold look in his eyes: “In any case, you have been already separated from Long Clan, so there is no need to care about

Long Mo'ran's reaction. In this world, only those who have enough strength can safeguard themselves.”

“It's not a good idea, what if Long Mo'ran knows about it.....”

Shu Shu somewhat panicked.

“Even if you don't practice, will Long Mo'ran let you off?”

Ye Feng chuckled and waved his hand: “Relax, you have Wan'er and me by your side currently, even if we again bump into Long Mo'ran, it's not like we don't have enough fighting strength.”

He said that so naturally relying on his as well as Long Wan'er's Immortal Cultivation, if they launched an Immortal Technique together while appropriately coordinating with each other, then, could absolutely succeed in killing him!

Unfortunately, these words of him were actually considered as a comfort in Shu Shu's eyes.

She nodded and mused about what Ye Feng just said, whether she practiced or not, Long Mo'ran would never let her off, so might as well she began to practice with this hope that at the key moment, she could also play an important role .....



## Chapter 188 - Long Distance Invisible Needles

---

Under the guidance of Long Wan'er and Ye Feng, Shu Shu finally started practising Long Clan's core technique and then together with Nan Fang, soon began the process of absorbing the spiritual energy of a small coral.

Long Wan'er also walked on the same road and simultaneously started absorbing the big Coral along with other small corals smoothly, quite rapidly and in one fell swoop, suddenly reached eighteen years of Cultivation!

This matter was something she had never imagined, now, not only she had 18 years of Cultivation but was also an Immortal Cultivator, whose real strength in the martial arts world was almost similar to the martial arts expert with almost 36 years of Cultivation.

"I have taught you several Immortal Techniques, how about your practice?"

When Ye Feng noticed that everything was smooth now, then finally felt relieved and asked.

"It's already done."

She said while blinking her eyes.

"Is it? Then release a fireball and let me see."

He was slightly surprised, Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, Invisibility and Red Inflammation, although these were simple basic Immortal Techniques and Long Wan'er had never gotten in touch with them before, still, incredibly, she learnt them extremely fast.

Although she had the body of immortal arteries, but this talent seemed to be also a little unexpected .....

Obviously, if replaced with Ye Feng, then perhaps he was much faster

than her, but her this speed had already greatly astonished him.

She heard that and without being hesitant, instantly started condensing Zhenqi in her hand, “boom” and in a flash, a fireball appeared from her palm!

Upon seeing its brightness and intensity, it was clear that the might of this fireball was much powerful than Ye Feng’s, besides, it was brighter, after all, she had reached 18 years of Cultivation.

“Pretty good.”

There was a trace of appreciation dripping from his eyes, it seemed that teaching her Cultivation was indeed a correct decision. This way in the future, she would turn into a big helping hand for him! If her 18 years and Ye Feng’s 12 years of Cultivation were added together, they became 30 years of Cultivation, in addition, the strength of Zhenqi was twice more powerful than an ordinary martial artist’s inner qi. So in short, the total count accompanied with double strength was more indelible than Long Mo’ran.

However, since Long Mo’ran had already reached the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique which Ye Feng hadn’t yet experienced, hence he didn’t know what would be its might. So literary speaking, he couldn’t be underestimated.

“In that case, now I’ll teach you another Immortal Technique, this is my and my master’s sect inherited Immortal Technique, Star Arrow.

Finally, he spoke out his own thought and again started explaining to her how to practice Star Arrow using proper Zhenqi’s operational line. This was not a simple basic Technique, perhaps even he needed to spend an hour or two to be able to display it initially, so it would be obviously even more difficult for her.

Indeed as expected, once she started listening to the process, immediately knitted her eyebrows as she felt that it was little complicated.

Every Immortal Technique’s principles and Zhenqi operational lines

were different, so if anyone accessed to a new Technique, couldn't learn it instantly, including Ye Feng. He was a talented genius but was not the God, obviously, he could comprehend any Immortal Technique much faster than an ordinary Immortal Cultivator, but still, he required time, it was just that there might be the speed difference.

“Once you will comprehend it properly, we will embark to go the sea, since I need you to use this technique to break open a layer of an ice wall.

Ye Feng said.

“Are we going to see your master?”

Long Wan'er suddenly turned a bit nervous.

“I hope she is there inside.”

He smiled: “Don't be nervous, although the temperament of my master is not so good, but she never embarrasses those who are on our side.

“Oh.”

She nodded, though her heart was still a little disturbed, after all, his master was an outstanding Immortal Cultivator, even Ye Feng had learnt everything from her .....

Although it was constantly pouring outside and the dark clouds were frequently lightning, making the whole sky pitch dark to the extent where not even a star could be seen, but still to display Star Arrow, seeing the stars wasn't that necessary. As long as the stars existed, she could slowly absorb the power of the group stars, leading to the formation of star arrows.

She sat firmly to comprehend it as fast as possible, it was already late at night, but the time was also flying a bit slowly.

Ye Feng also sat aside, the residue of the big Coral King and the three small corals were over burned, so as to erase all evidence. However there still remained five small corals, the spiritual energy of which hadn't much left, but at the key moment, they could still supplement Zhenqi, making Ye Feng belt them up on his body.

“Hmm?”

Suddenly, he frowned.

“What happened?”

Nearby, Nan Fang was studying that two equipment, when he heard Ye Feng’s voice, then asked out of curiosity.

“What is this thing?”

Ye Feng raised his arm, looked at something and suddenly turned vigilant. Actually, he saw a silver needle suddenly stabbed into his arm. If he hadn’t felt a burning pain in his arm, most probably wouldn’t have found the silver needle.

“It’s not good, this is a long distance invisible needle?”

Long Wan’er swept her Soul Search around and immediately spoke out loud being a bit shocked.

“Long distance invisible needle, what is this thing?”

Ye Feng pulled out the silver needle but soon felt that his whole arm actually started paralysing and gradually his consciousness also started getting blurred.

“It’s the hidden weapon technique of Hidden Immortal sect which can be displayed from quite a long distance and interestingly, it’s completely silent.”

She hurriedly explained, then stood up and immediately swept again towards the surrounding area: “It’s not that wonderful, it seems like there are some people constantly staring at us, I never thought that Soul Search couldn’t detect this invisible needle. Everybody, be a bit more careful.”

Hearing her explanation, Ye Feng’s complexion all of a sudden dignified.

Now Long Wan’er had 18 years of Cultivation, therefore her Soul Search’s detection range had also increased to 180 meters. However, within this range, there wasn’t any suspicious person. Thus it was clear

that the expert of Hidden Immortal Sect was far away. But, although Ye Feng's Cultivation was already 12 years, still he couldn't sense anything.

Long distance invisible needle was indeed worthy of its name!

At this moment, Ye Feng suddenly thought of the abandoned factory outside Yanjing, when that armed escort, Zhu Hun had used a hidden weapon, its distance of emission was similarly over a hundred meters.

"It seems that the hidden weapon experts are highly regarded in the martial arts world."

Ye Feng thought that the current situation was like this, not only they totally failed to notice the existence of the opposite party, but most importantly they were also quite familiar with them since an invisible needle had directly hit on his arm.

"Little Feng come quickly, I have to show you something."

Shu Shu ran upto him and pulled his arm.

"Be careful, you stay behind me."

Ye Feng didn't think anything and suddenly stood in front Shu Shu with open arms.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Continuously several silver needles, one after another, were shot from outside the balcony, even he also couldn't see its whereabouts. Immediately his whole body was pierced by several invisible needles! These needles were tainted with toxicant, which rapidly spread in his body, making his whole body gradually paralyse.

It was not that only he was shot, but nearby standing Long Wan'er and Nan Fang were similarly shot a good number of silver needles.

That famous Hidden Immortal Sect's expert was exceptionally formidable!

Why would someone provoke such expert?

Ye Feng wanted to understand and secretly regretted in his heart on

this thought that he should have directly resolved that woman back then.

During his stay In Changbai Mountain, his sword had killed the adopted son of a Hidden Immortal Sect, named Li Junlong, but just because of Zhu Bainiao's sake, he let that woman Cuckoo off. Now, because of her, this matter was definitely known by the people of Hidden Immortal Sect and in order to take revenge for Li Junlong, they sent people to attack them.

Outside the room in the rainstorm, a jet black silhouette approached fast and seemingly, was very agile, meritorious, light and dreadful!

A bunch of lightning streaked across the night sky, wearing a night cloth and a black mask, that mysterious figure seemed very dreadful, while a pair of his eyes were like a ghost in general, making anyone shudder.

He was a hidden weapon expert with fifty years of Cultivation!

## Chapter 189 - Broken Magical Crossbow

---

Those powerhouses with 50 years of Cultivation were considered as the first-class masters even by Long Clan, so not to mention the Hidden Immortal Sect. Apparently, in order to kill Ye Feng, the Hidden Immortal Sect had already made the firm determination.

Previously under the sea, Ye Feng had already seen several formidable martial artists with fifty years of Cultivation, even he counterattacked there to kill a God Fist Gate's expert and rob the big Coral King.

However now, this wasn't the seabed, rather was the land of a village where he was encountering an extremely skilled, agile and dreadful like ghosts, a hidden weapon expert who used the long distance invisible needles as his weapon and which couldn't be detected even by his Soul Search Technique!

Now it seemed that the martial arts on the Earth was definitely not like how Ye Feng had imagined earlier, instead, it was so unbearable.

His Soul Search was constantly locked outside the house, directly at that hidden weapon expert.

When the opposite party approached within 120 meters scope, then Ye Feng's Soul Search could finally sense his existence, but unfortunately, his speed was terribly fast. To think that the same Immortal Technique – Red Inflammation could be used again to kill him was basically impossible.

Besides, other than Ye Feng, Long Wan'er and Nan Fang were also shot by these invisible needles, which instantly made their bodies somewhat paralysed, while their motion was disrupted as well. Now it had become quite difficult for them to withstand the enemy.

Ye Feng turned around and by taking advantage of the candlelight, looked at Nan Fang and then those two slightly nodded together.

Bang!

Suddenly at this moment, a small flying knife finally entered the room penetrating through the balcony's glass windows, however, its initial target was not Ye Feng, but was Long Wan'er!

"Invisible, sneak attack, leg!"

All of a sudden Ye Feng jumped towards Long Wan'er and avoided that flying knife, after that, quickly moved close to her ear and said gently.

"Hmm."

She didn't hesitate, right after seeing through his hint, immediately started operating Zhenqi within her body and instantaneously made her stature completely invisible!

There was utter darkness around those four people and on top of that, now she was under the spell of Invisibility technique, hence no one could find her traces.

Ye Feng could feel that outside the room, an astonished expression suddenly crawled over the face of that hidden weapon expert, as it seemed that he couldn't understand how a living being suddenly got disappeared right in front of his eyes.

Besides, it seemed that the hidden weapon expert could clearly see the situation inside the room even though it was a dark night accompanied with rainstorm. That explained everything, he certainly had also brought any high-tech product, such as infrared viewing device and so on. But still, this kind of thing was completely useless in front of Invisibility Technique.

As per Ye Feng's sensation, Long wan'er somewhat clumsily jumped out of the balcony, it seemed that those invisible needles had made her flexibility drop enormously.

He didn't hesitate as well, similarly followed her and arrived in the balcony, then aimed at the enemy and puffed out a fireball directly towards him! This fellow had been hiding in a secret place all along and a while ago, when Ye Feng killed Nigusi Ding, he definitely watched



everything, hence this Immortal Technique -Red Inflammation didn't remain a secret anymore.

As expected, the opposite party saw Ye Feng spouting a fireball, although he had some doubts, but actually wasn't that surprised, instead his stature dodged and easily avoided it, at the same time single-handedly, he flung something.

Shua Shua Shua!

A row of dozens of small flying knives sprinkled directly towards the balcony.

Holy Women Scattered Flower Technique!

This hidden weapon expert, if compared with Changbai Mountain's Li Junlong, was much highly talented. Li Junlong could only emit more than ten, however, this fellow could actually release more than thirty knives and on top of that, could also mix some thinner silver needles along with them, producing a gloomy aura and violently poisonous effect.

Facing this kind of situation, the two people could only avoid.

In a flash, Ye Feng moved one side to hide behind a wardrobe, at the same time, the sound of flying knives shooting in the wooden closet echoed with a lingering effect, Bang Bang! But Long wan'er lowered her head and used the balcony's brick wall as a barrier.

"If I were at 20 years of Cultivation, I didn't need to be so hard-pressed ....."

Ye Feng thought that the disciples of Star Tomb Sect at least needed 20 years of Cultivation to practice an Immortal Technique – Mercury Shield, which was the most appropriate one to resist this kind of an attack.

Shua!

As soon as the flying knives were blocked by the wardrobe, Ye Feng promptly jumped out, simultaneously his golden sword flashed in his hand, immediately followed by an icy-blue Beheading Dragon Sword qi, which rapidly rushed towards the enemy, penetrating through the rain

curtain!

Sword qi's speed was extremely fast and it arrived in a flash.

The opposite party moved a step as he wanted to avoid it, but his speed was not enough. That Sword qi arrived much faster than he expected and passed while wiping his face and breaking his night vision device which was there on his black mask!

Hiding nearby, Long Wan'er also took advantage of this chaotic moment, quickly jumped out, wielded her hand and shot a dark blue arrow.

Puff!

Her broken concealed shot was virtually impossible to guard against. The dark blue arrow suddenly penetrated the right thigh of the hidden master expert, while its huge penetrating power made him repel a big step back and then he heavily fell into the inundated sea water, accompanied with water splashes.

"This Star Arrow though had an enormous penetrating power, but the speed was insufficient ....."

Ye Feng suddenly saw her shooting Star Arrow and felt that she indeed had tried her best to fully grasp this Technique, however, it really was not a short time thing.

At this moment, they were on the balcony, just wanted to jump down finish that guy up. However right at this time, they simultaneously felt that their bodies suddenly turned stiff, because the poison attached to those invisible needles finally broke out at one fell swoop!

"Jue Sha!"

A deep voice spread from the bottom of the sea water, followed by a series of flying knives, breaking through the water surface, flew towards the balcony, directly targeting those two people.

Although Ye Feng didn't know how this fellow could throw so many flying knives, but presently he didn't need to consider this issue.

“Jue Sha is a killer technique of the Hidden Immortal Sect, with its endless flying knives he deathtraps people in a tweak. His sneak attack always goes smoothly everywhere, even in the front battle, his pre-eminent shot can kill even a super strong martial artist and that also quite easily!

Long Wan'er quickly filled him with the necessary explanation, although using her Soul search she had already sensed a series of flying knives approaching fast, but since her body was stiff, couldn't make any movement.

Ye Feng similarly felt so, the poison of those invisible needles had dramatically suppressed the effect of his Zhenqi, making him extremely feeble.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Although his whole body's strength had almost exhausted, but still he pulled Long Wan'er behind him, then raised his arms to face the endless flying knives attacking them.

One after another, those flying knives pierced his arm deeply to the extent where even his bone became visible and in a flash, his both arms were covered with blood.

This killer technique of the Hidden Immortal Sect “Jue Sha” barely took five seconds *Shua* and released 100 flying knives, holding a terrific force which not even Ye Feng's Immortal body could resist for long and soon his arms were shot to the pulp.

However, this extremely brilliant killer technique only continued for half a second and then it stopped following-up. Not only he didn't have more knives to shoot, even there was no sound underwater.

Was he going through the shortage of flying knives?

Or his conscience found that he wanted to leave their lives?

However, it was not like that.

“Damn, I was scared to death, but fortunately hit the target.”

A voice accompanied with some foul words passed on from the downstairs bathroom, it was actually Nan Fang : “The broken magical crossbow is pretty good, its single arrow burned the enemy to the crisp.

After losing his night vision device and being severely injured because of his thigh, the mobility of the hidden weapon expert was tremendously disrupted. However, eventually, he was sneak attacked by Nan Fang, who was hiding aside and was killed in one fell swoop!

The exquisite co-ordination of these three people finally made them escape.

“Are you all right?”

Shu Shu was in the room when she heard Nan Fang using foul words and suddenly her restless heart finally calmed down. Afterwards, she promptly went to the balcony, however on seeing Ye Feng falling backwards, hastily opened a pair of her white delicate arms and he firmly clung onto her.

Incautiously, Ye Feng rested his head on her plentiful and soft two front groups .....

## Chapter 190 - Slaughtering God Ghost Hand

---

Unbalanced, Ye Feng heavily fell backwards, really his body was not under his control. Besides, not only his body was paralysed by the toxin, but his both arms were also covered with multiple injuries caused by those flying knives, making him totally unable to hold anymore.

Originally he thought he would certainly fall to the ground and would see stars spinning around his head. But, he hadn't expected that he would actually hit a soft place and feel like lying on a pillow, which made him comfortably relieved.

“Little Feng, your hand?”

Under the dim candlelight inside the room, Shu Shu suddenly noticed his hands were pierced by several knives and fresh blood was dripping continuously. This scene suddenly scared her and stole away the colour of her pretty face, how was he hurt so badly?

Ye Feng heard her voice and immediately understood where he was lying, which made his face bright red. Undoubtedly, Shu Shu's body was splendid, plentiful, soft and indeed her front two groups were extremely comfortable, but she was Long Wan'er's Aunt after all.....

“Don't worry about this, just support and take us inside .....”

He immediately said.

At first he wanted to struggle and stand up, but unfortunately couldn't do it, because the paralysis effect of the long distance invisible needle was too strong. Not only him, even Long Wan'er, whom he had shielded just now, couldn't move as well and was standing all stiff against the balcony.

On seeing Ye Feng resting on Shu Shu's comfortable bosom, Long Wan'er cursed him in her heart for acting like a big pervert. In usual time, she would have certainly grabbed his ear by now to lambaste him.

However now, under such critical circumstances, she didn't have the intention to do so.

Besides, when she looked at his severely injured arms, her heart was a little touched as she thought that at the critical moment, it was him who pulled her behind his back, or else these knives might have also penetrated her body.

She thought now she had to be a bit faster to suppress the effect of the poison, then after could display Holy Cure Technique to help him cure his arms promptly.

Very quickly, Shu Shu took Ye Feng inside the room, although it didn't take long to do so, but this short period was very exquisite and pleasant throughout, making Ye Feng feel a little embarrassed.

However Shu Shu didn't think anything odd, soon she also brought Long Wan'er inside and then immediately looked for clean clothes and tore down two pieces of cloth.

"Little Feng, you will have to endure a bit."

Shu Shu gently said, then pulled out several knives from Ye Feng's arms hastily.

Seeing her gentle and quick action, it could be clearly said she had a very rich experience in dealing with such wounds. Once the knives were pulled out, immediately she wrapped two strips of cloth around his arm and tied them up to stop bleeding.

Her action was really quick and was very light and gentle, which instantly greatly reduced Ye Feng's pain, making him take a breath of relief. After tying his arms with cloth strips, his bleeding finally completely stopped.

"Aunt, you have to go downstairs to see where Nan Fang is."

Ye Feng suddenly felt that something wasn't right, after all why there was no sound from Nan Fang's side?

He swept his Soul Search and found something, which made him smile

a bit.

In order to launch a sneak attack to kill the hidden weapon expert, at one fell swoop, with the broken magical crossbow, Nan Fang had hidden in the ground floor's bathroom. But there, the sea water had already inundated to the waist level and the worst part of the whole story, at such a critical moment, his toxin also erupted, making him unable to remain standing anymore. As a result, he tumbled down and turned completely motionless.

If nobody would go to look for him, perhaps like this, he would drown to death in the water.

“Hmm.”

Currently, Shu Shu was the only person who could move freely, therefore she nodded, then carried a candle and went downstairs.

In a short while, she dragged him upstairs. Presently, in her eyes, Nan Fang was just a personal attendant of Ye Feng, hence she certainly didn't need to be good to him. Besides, it was also impossible that she would do the same treatment like she did to Ye Feng.

Nan Fang was dragged all the way to the room, frequent bumps made him want to shout out loud. Eventually, he burst into tears and said: “Aunt, please be a bit gentle .....I, hit the eggs .....”

Soon Shu Shu dragged him up, then flung him on the spot, indirectly making him have tears streaming down his face.

Rest.

At present Long Wan'er was at the highest place among them, so naturally she eliminated the effect of poison and recovered really fast. Then without further ado, she immediately cast Holy Cure Technique and started curing Ye Feng's arm.

Since her Cultivation had already taken a higher position, so the treatment effect was obviously better.

Under the glory of the golden light, Ye Feng's pulpy arms quickly

returned to normal, only leaving behind a few ugly scars, probably the scars would completely vanish over the time.

As a result, Long Wan'er's Zhenqi was all consumed up soon. But luckily there were still small corals, so Ye Feng immediately tossed a small coral towards her to let her supplement her Zhenqi.

The situation gradually finally stabilised.

After getting all well, Ye Feng went downstairs to bring the corpse of hidden weapon expert from the water.

This fellow had fifty years of Cultivation, so he would be definitely very famous in the martial arts world and most likely Long Wan'er could easily identify his identity. Once he knew who the opposite party was, then could know more information. In addition, he could also conveniently search his body to steal the remaining flying knives.

Nan Fang had already comprehended Crying Ghost Blade Technique, but unfortunately, he didn't have a single flying cutter to use.

Quite soon Ye Feng found the corpse and then noticed he was actually shot in the temple by Nan Fang's crossbow arrow. Actually, not only he was deeply stabbed, but the effect of the broken magical crossbow didn't let him survive even for a second after being stabbed.

When he opened his black mask, Long Wan'er saw his face and called out loud in astonishment.

“He is the Slaughter God Ghost Hand, Qin Ge!”

In the martial arts world, mostly all well-renowned experts had their own nickname. Many were self-styled, such as Jiangsu Duo kind of tiny persona, however, some were truly worth recognising.

Such as Zhui Hun – the armed escort from the previous encounter and currently this Slaughter God Ghost Hand – Qin Ge, these were some prominent figures in the martial arts world.

And as for this expert who had a mighty 50 years of Cultivation, it could be said that he was capable enough to take sole responsibility for



an important task in the martial arts world. However, he was actually killed because of the exquisite coordination of these three people. Not to talk about others, even he himself hadn't thought earlier that he, the famous Slaughter God Ghost Hand, while dealing with these three young children, would actually suffer a huge setback.

The people of Hidden Immortal Sect could certainly never believe that Qin Ge, whom they were truly proud of had not only lost his life, but also his all stuff were plundered by Ye Feng.

A knife bag hanging on his waist still had more than 20 light and small flying knives, while near his both ankles area there were syringes which were used to shoot the long distance invisible needles with paralytic toxins. Besides, there was also a black ink that, probably it was the deadly toxin used with those needles.

But the fatal toxin long needle was quite thick, hence was totally inappropriate for a sneak attack.

All these things were finally turned over to Nan Fang, which made him extremely happy and in excitement, he started grinning from ear to ear.

His shot could kill the great hidden weapon expert, this was truly something Long Wan'er hadn't thought. Secretly, she looked towards Ye Feng while thinking that from now on, she was not the only person who could fight.

“We will leave this place right away.”

After plundering, Ye Feng set out once he made a firm resolve. Since a series of so many people attacked them, which made it seem that this village was no longer safe.

“Hmm.....”

Long Wan'er also set out with him but then suddenly her eyebrows tightly wrinkled up : “Again some people have popped up.”

Now the scope of her Soul Search was even more than Ye Feng, it had reached 180-meters of scope.

“Who is it?”

Ye Feng, Nan Fang and Shu Shu simultaneously got tensed up.

“They are the two from the hotel who were looking for you in the morning.”

Long Wan'er looked at Ye Feng and smiled faintly: “A gorgeous woman Oh, but the point is, why is she looking for you?”

“Who, Xiao Yue and Wang Shao?”

Ye Feng was suddenly taken aback, then after a while, he thought something and slightly smiled.

## Chapter 191 - A Witty Shark

---

Soon, the opposite party entered the perception range of Ye Feng's Soul Search Technique.

And as expected, they were Xiao Yue and Wang Shaodong. When Ye Feng proliferated his Soul Search, automatically his focus got stuck on the pretty girl, Xiao Yue. It must be said the stature of this gorgeous girl was indeed splendid. In such a stormy weather, although she had worn a raincoat, still was unable to cover up her mature and mesmerising figure.

But instantly Ye Feng's focus again got shifted towards Wang Shaodong.

Originally, it was Wang Shaodong who wanted to hire people in order to kill him, however now, he took the initiative to come on his own. This was too much, now Ye Feng didn't have any reason left to let him off! Besides, he didn't care about the opposite party's identity, even if he died in this barren hills and the edge of the tsunami, who would blame him?

Having grudge didn't mean he was not a gentleman.

Although Ye Feng didn't see himself as a gentleman, but his hatred must be reported and at present, it was an excellent opportunity. Relying on his and Long Wan'er's combined strength, killing him and then throwing his body into the sea would be quite easier for them, besides who would know about it?

This was originally Wang Shaodong's own idea to kill and throw, however now, it was going to be implemented on his own body.

"Let me have a look first, will be right back."

Ye Feng immediately stood up.

In such a stormy weather, where the sea water had already inundated the whole village to the waist level, the motion of Shu Shu and Nan Fang

was badly disrupted, causing a huge inconvenience to them. In addition, there was also a comatose youth of Taiji Palace along with them .....

Once Ye Feng would get success in quietly dealing with Wang Shaodong, then would lead these people to leave here as fast as possible. The most critical thing was to ensure the safety of these three people, Nan Fang, Shu Shu and comatose youth and make them return safely. While he along with Long Wan'er would continue to go to the overseas, in order to break open the thick and cold ice wall.

He quickly left the village alone, then submerged into the waist-deep icy cold sea water and secretly advanced towards approaching Xiao Yue and Wang Shaodong.

Now he was the hunter!

.....

Xiao Yue and Wang Shaodong, carrying some useful equipment, set out all the way from the central Xiangshan County, then passing through the police blockade line, finally arrived at this small mountain village.

Seeing the waist level cold sea water, she somewhat hesitated and a bit puzzled asked: "Are you sure the masked man is really here? Why don't you make a phone call to your subordinates to confirm this?"

"No need to, they were talking about this village only."

Wang Shaodong said, however, he turned his back while similarly somewhat despising the inundated sea water as he thought that this water was so filthy and he was such a grandly reputed person in Shanghai City, so how could he walk into this water and dirty his legs?

Though he didn't know why those five punks still hadn't updated him till now, but it was reasonable to say that they had already successfully arrived at their target location.

He had never thought that those five little punks were actually slaughtered and then thrown into the sea by that masked guy already and that also quite easily.

“Or else, how about this Xiao Yue, before proceeding we just wait for a while.”

Wang Shaodong switched on a flashlight since he felt that the village in front was gloomy and a little virtual.

“There is a smell of blood.”

Xiao Yue was more sensitive than him, although it was still pouring in torrents, but she was still quite sharp and quickly felt a faint smell of blood around the surrounding area. This smell didn't seem to be the smell of fishes, but what this smell was, regarding this she was totally unaware. However, a woman's intuition made her think that this place was pretty dangerous.

“What, a smell of blood? Probably there is a little”

Wang Shaodong filled his lungs with two deep breaths, then nodded as he felt gloomy in his heart, certainly, those five bludgers would have killed the masked boy with their iron bars. Now, as long as they would stay here, would wait for those five to come back and update them.

“Be careful.”

Suddenly, Xiao Yue felt that there was a strange form in the front waist-deep sea water, as if something was approaching fast.

“What is that thing?”

Wang Shaodong similarly sensed something and promptly focused his flashlight towards it. But what he saw was a shark in the shallow water which was rapidly swimming towards them.

This scene all of a sudden scared the hell out of him!

Almost like a conditioned reflex, Xiao Yue and Wang Shaodong simultaneously drew back rapidly. They hadn't thought that in such shallow water near the shore, which had been actually caused by the tidal wave, there would be actually a shark, this was totally unscientific!

Unfortunately, they had barely taken a small step back and by then, that shark had already approached the shore and had already taken a

powerful leap towards them.

It was truly a shark!

The ferocious look in its eyes, accompanied with its sharp and incomparable canine had undoubtedly indicated that once they were nipped by it, absolutely would have the fate of death.

The shark jumped out of the water surface and while spreading a huge wide mouth, advanced towards Wang Shaodong to bit his head.

“Ah!”

All of a sudden this action frightened Wang Shaodong and he started shouting: “Help, help!”

Flurriedly he retreated, but unfortunately got tripped by the common vetch of ground. Panic-stricken, coupled with his extreme fear, he peed in his pants and also dropped his flashlight somewhere!

At this chaotic time, he didn't have enough time to think why this place actually had such a wild shark. He was badly regretting on the idea to accompany Xiao Yue to this ghastly place, obviously, he was just waiting outside for those bludgers to show up.....

But it seemed that something was wrong, why not a single one of those bludgers responded to him so far, were they also eaten up by the shark?

Wang Shaodong pupils contracted fiercely, while his brain started racing crazily. At this life and death moment, his survival instincts suddenly fired up and made him think of a way suddenly.

Abruptly he grabbed nearby standing Xiao Yue who was also similarly retreating and then pulled her in front of him!

Xiao Yue suddenly staggered as she was pulled, she hadn't ever thought that at a critical time, he would make such a move. Actually using a woman as a shield, wasn't this too shameless? Naturally, she didn't have time to ponder at such a shocking moment.

Confronting a giant size shark leaping towards her, but still, she immediately calmed her mind and became all prepared to show the

strength of her karate black belt by launching a solid kick on the shark.

No matter who it was, under such a heart-chilling situation, anyone would be extremely nervous seeing such a ferocious shark. However, she was actually capable enough to stabilize her mind, indirectly forcing that shark to have a feeling of little respect for her.

Of course, a shark couldn't feel anything or show respect for its prey, but it did and it was because of a reason. Actually, the truth was this shark was no one but Ye Feng, who, by using Camouflage Technique, had made them think that the figure appeared in their line of sight was not a human but a mighty shark.

Ye Feng was in midair when he suddenly took a sharp turn and then bypassing Xiao Yue, grabbed Wang Shaodong who was shielded behind her.

For Xiao Yue this was quite a strange move, a shark leapt over her and bit Wang Shaodong's arm, which greatly stunned her, while her eyes went wide open as she thought that could it be possible that a shark could take a turn? It was so quick-witted, wasn't it?

Or could it be that it didn't like nipping a woman?

Without waiting for her response, the shark tightly bit Wang Shaodong right before her eyes, then while dragging him along, immediately flung back into the sea water.

“Ah —”

Wang Shaodong's blood-curdling screech reverberated for a while.

On the other side, thunderstruck, Xiao Yue subconsciously retreated several steps back and soon leant against a tree, while constantly breathing heavily. Her stature, wrapped in a raincoat, was looking extremely captivating in this rainstorm. But her palpitation had reached its maximum limit, which made it appear like this scene was indeed too big shock for her to handle.

“Not good, Wang Shao .....

After a while, suddenly a thought hit her mind that the person who was bitten up and got dragged away by the shark was Shanghai City's most popular guy, Wang Shaodong! Moreover, he came over here just because of her and now was .....

If this news reached Wang Clan's ear, then wouldn't she be considered as done for?

Frankly speaking, wasn't Wang Shaodong just now dragged away by a shark?

The devil's letter! Who would believe it!

She didn't dare to think much, just stepped forward and directly jumped into the water!



## Chapter 192 - Encountering Interception

---

In an instant, Ye Feng grabbed Wang Shaodong and dragged him away below the water.

Wang Shaodong bellowed all the way repeatedly while thinking that he was really being dragged away by a shark into this extremely cold water and this thought all of a sudden struck his heart by extreme despair.

He regretted in his heart that he shouldn't come to this kind of damned place, now it seemed that he was absolutely done for, all over for him .....

As for Ye Feng, he thought that drawing him into the water was dangerous enough to drown him to death. However, he didn't wait until Wang Shaodong took his last breath, simply swept around and shockingly found that Xiao Yue was actually following him.

"This woman, doesn't she want to live?"

A little surprised, he thought that in this sort of unfavourable weather, she actually dared to enter the water, wasn't she afraid of being also towed away by a shark? Or could it be that Wang Shaodong was extremely precious to her, so she couldn't throw him no matter what?

He didn't want to think much because suddenly he felt that within the scope of his Soul Search, there was a mighty wave, billowing ghastly as if any moment it would engulf them all. Moreover, right after this wave, the sea water in the entire village would rise again quite a few centimetres.

Therefore Xiao Yue's presence into the seawater and that also at this point of time was undoubtedly suicidal. Even if he ignored her, still she would be definitely washed away by the waves and would die without getting any burial ground.

She must know the current situation prevailing in the present seabed, not even Long Mo'ran could dare to step into the sea, not to mention her, a huge chested and brainless woman!

At this instant, his Zhenqi suddenly surged up and the next moment, with his hand, he cut off the arteries of Wang Shaodong's heart and then immediately loosened his hand to let him get swept away by the mighty waves. This popular playboy had not only committed plenty of evil things but had also played with several innocent girls' emotions, but now, he was doomed like this.

If he was killed and then thrown away into the sea, who could ever know?

His original idea finally came true and that also on his own body, henceforth his soul would return to the sea.

As soon as Ye Feng loosened his hand, a mighty wave whirled around and suddenly flushed away Wang Shaodong's body, at the same time, it also rolled him up along with Xiao Yue. Fortunately, he hurriedly displayed Dragon Turtle Holding Breath Technique and quickly stabilised his stature, however, Xiao Yue couldn't normalise her body like how he did.

The gigantic billowing wave directly curled her up without giving her enough time to respond.

Under the storm, in this utter darkness, although lightning was flashing from a distant place frequently, but that wasn't enough for her to discover the billowing waves' attack! Forget about finding Wang Shaodong, now she herself was actually got curled up by a killer wave.

But interestingly she didn't regret because she knew that if she couldn't bring Wang Shaodong back and returned to Shanghai alone, then would certainly be trampled upon by Wang Clan and eventually would be forced to return to Yanjing .....

And this was something she never wanted to let it happen. She had come to Shanghai for her college study, then, after graduating from the college, she decided to stay here because she didn't want to get trapped in her family's cage?

Trapped within this dangerous wave, she couldn't balance her body and soon felt her whole body was being washed away further away in

this icy-cold water and which also affected her consciousness, making it become more and more blurred. But, right at this time, suddenly she felt that her hand was grabbed.

“Move.”

A deep male voice resounded in her ears, followed by a jolt, simultaneously she felt that she was being dragged to the shore.

Obviously, there was no one but Ye Feng who moved forward to rescue her.

He killed Wang Shaodong because that guy wanted to kill him first, this way Ye Feng used his way to deal with him. However Xiao Yue was actually an innocent person, hence he couldn't see her dying like this in this.

Anyway, this way it was more convenient to deal with.

In the icy-cold water, he swam all the way to the shore while dragging Xiao Yue along. Meanwhile, he kept on avoiding several ice pieces which were popping up along the way. Eventually, they were brought to the shore by a gigantic wave.

After that, the wave retreated leaving behind two completely drenched bodies, however, he didn't have time to waste, immediately started pressing her body so as to save her.

“Keke ..... coughs .....”

Xiao Yue was presently in a state of dizziness to the extent where she couldn't even understand what actually happened just now, but still, she could vaguely feel that someone had saved her.

It was just that why was her chest seemed to be so heavily pressed and causing her extreme discomfort?

“Just go back, don't ask for the trouble.”

Ye Feng said in a low voice, then floatingly, he set out, simultaneously proliferated his Soul Search and found that Long Wan'er was rushing towards him from one side.

“Is everything all right?”

Long Wan'er's crispy voice, in the pitch-dark night, sounded like an angel. At least for Xiao Yue, it sounded too much like an angel because this made her know that she was really still alive.

“Yes, all right. Now let's go.”

He said and when was about to leave .....

“Coughs ... Wang ..... Wang Shaodong?”

Taking the support of a big tree, Xiao Yue stood up, although was looking very much distressed but still asked.

“He was dragged away by the shark, I am extremely sorry I couldn't save him.”

He replied in a low voice.

Meanwhile, occasionally peeping out faint light of lightning, passing from a distance place, suddenly made his face, covered with a grimace face mask, appear right before her eyes.

“It's you!”

Xiao Yue called out in alarm loudly as she thought that how she didn't expect that it would be the masked man who rescued her in this kind of situation.

“If you still want to jump into the sea to commit suicide, then do as you please, I have rescued you once, but now have no time to rescue you again.”

After finished saying everything coldly, he went forward, pulled Long Wan'er close and walked away.

“Hold on!”

She still remembered that she along with Wang Shaodong came to this place just to find the masked man. However now, although she had found the masked man, but Wang Shaodong had gone .....

She wasn't a brainless person, quickly understood that in this situation,

going to the sea again was purely suicidal. Now she had only one choice and that was to abandon the idea of finding Wang Shaodong.

She wanted to keep up with them hastily, but since she didn't have a flashlight, hence was not even able to see the shadows of those two people. It seemed that she was alone there in the woods of the village

Now finally she understood a bit that when Xiao Qi was rescued twice by this masked man, what kind of mood she would have then.

What should be done now?

Undoubtedly she knew that she should now return, but didn't it mean her plan was totally ruined? Since her initial idea was to dig out the masked man and then warn him not to give any wrong idea to her younger sister, Xiao Qi.

Now she knew it was ridiculous.

Someone simply rescued Xiao Qi twice without harbouring any cheap ideas for her! But unfortunately, Xiao Qi took it as if her love was being reciprocated. Now what she should educate her younger sister Xiao Qi was that the masked man didn't belong to anyone.

Originally she had this thought that the masked man wanted to straddle the fence .....

Now that she was also saved by the masked man once, she could clearly feel that he didn't rescue her because he had some feelings for her. Besides, she also didn't know that what kind of relationship was there between this masked man and Yanjing's Ye Feng?

She pondered for a while, then promptly turned around and started walking hastily. She had barely walked to the half when suddenly heard the quarrelling voice of few people.

.....

"The people in front, stop!"

A man's voice passed through a loudspeaker in a tone dripping with threatening attitude: "Find any suspicious person, bring them back right

away!”

On the hilltop, suddenly the shadows of several people appeared. Besides, because of the vehicle’s headlight, everything was clearly visible, they were Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi along with four soldiers of the NSA.

But, there were some other figures as well and one of them was a black dressed man holding a stupor youth, while just beside him, there was also a mature and petite womanly figure.

They were Nan Fang, Shu Shu and Taiji Palace’s youth!

Just when Ye Feng was about to attack Wang Shaodong, he had already made these people leave this place quietly. But he hadn’t expected that in the midway, they would actually bump into the NSA’s interception.

Nan Fang stopped for a while, then, glanced around to measure the intensity of the current situation.

This was such a pain in the ass situation, could it be that this time, the NSA really wanted to ask them to have a cup of tea with them? Although now, he didn’t need to worry about being tracked down by any other martial artist, however falling into the hands of the NSA was also not a good end .....

“Invisibility, cast it together.”

At this moment, behind, Ye Feng softly whispered to Long Wan’er and immediately both of them turned completely invisible.

Originally, they had done all preparations to go to the overseas directly, but their Soul Search suddenly detected this situation, naturally making them return to help Nan Fang to deal with those fellows of the NSA.

Two invisible people, like a ghostly stature, advanced towards the NSA’s military truck quite rapidly!

## Chapter 193 - Quite Dreadful

---

Honestly speaking, when Ye Feng's eyes fell on Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi, he was really startled and couldn't figure out why these two Yanjing's arrogant women came to do this ghastly place.

But regardless of who they were, if they wanted to stop him, then only two words could be said: No way!

He, along with Long Wan'er, under the spell of Invisibility, quickly advanced towards the opposite party.

There were four fully armed NSA soldiers who were sent along with these two ladies to protect and help them in carrying out a special action and interestingly the goal of this action was nothing but to seize the masked man.

When they saw Nan Fang along with Shu Shu, without any discrimination, they directly ordered to make an arrest. Anyways, this late at night and that also in this kind of place, it was impossible to believe that they would be just ordinary civilians!

The two soldiers stayed back for the protection of these two ladies, while the remaining two, carrying firearms, carefully, a bit vigilantly, advanced towards Nan Fang and other two people.

“There's also one on the vehicle?”

At this moment, Ye Feng proliferated his Soul Search and immediately sensed that there was one more fellow on the military truck, which made him slightly wrinkle his eyebrows. Because, this way, the opposite party had three stormy men, while they were just two, so it would be kind of difficult for them to knock them down instantaneously.

As for the common NSA soldiers, he didn't want to kill them, it wasn't because he was afraid of future trouble, but because as for him, they were the country's true heroes, who had dedicated their whole life to serve

their country.

Of course, the people like Li Feng, who used to be too arrogant and despotic, killing them even hundred times wouldn't be ever overrated.

Ye Feng turned his head to look at Nan Fang, the three people with the exquisite coordination once again appeared.

Anyways, without any hesitation, while being invisible, he came around those two ladies and quickly launched his first shot. Holding two knives in his both hands, he heavily hit those two NSA men who were especially guarding those two ladies and made them unconscious on the spot!

Two stuffy groans attracted the attention of other two NSA soldiers and they immediately turned around carrying their firearms, but right at this moment, Long Wan'er also made her move.

Bang! Bang!

Since her Cultivation was clearly higher than Ye Feng, hence she neatly, quite smoothly knocked them down in an instant.

Seeing the situation had terrifically changed, the last NSA soldier who was on the truck, immediately tried to send a message and ask for the reinforcement, but before he could do anything, "Shua" a black dressed figure dropped from the clouds and directly jumped towards his side.

It was Nan Fang who suddenly appeared before him wearing Nigusi Ding's electrical bouncing boots.

Puff!

While his small crossbow arrow directly penetrated the palm of the NSA driver to prevent him from making any phone call for the support. Afterwards, he pulled him down from the driver's seat and heavily thrown him on the ground in this heavy rainfall.

Ye Feng's speed was extremely fast, instantly he ran over and hit him with a hand knife to make him unconscious.

The NSA members used to wear thick and excellently equipped clothes,



because of which Nan Fang couldn't harm him, therefore, Ye Feng jumped in.

All settled!

The entire process took place just in less than a second time, so neither Lin Shiqing nor Xiao Qi got the time to even respond. When the driver was also settled, then these two women turned around and suddenly saw the figure of Nan Fang and Ye Feng in front.

“It's him!”

All of a sudden, this scene turned Xiao Qi extremely excited, while her eyes dripping with pleasant surprise, got stuck on Ye Feng's face mask, making her lovable small face bright red under the raincoat.

“You stop right there!”

Lin Shiqing scathingly said: “Surprisingly you dared to even hit the NSA soldiers .....

Her heart was already hit by an extreme shock, five NSA's specialised soldiers were taken down and that also in a matter of few seconds, where they didn't even get enough time to react! How could the opposite party get that close to them without getting noticed, could it be that he could make himself invisible?

“Cut the crap and tell me straight, what brought you two here?”

Ye Feng's low and dense voice all of a sudden interrupted her.

“We are here looking for you.”

Xiao Qi spoke out directly.

“Hey, Xiao Qi, Sister Lin, how have you been ever since our last meeting?”

At this time, Nan Fang, while leaning against a tree, said holding a frivolous expression like a maiden's tone with a touch of slight anger: “As for the matters here, I advise you don't get involved for your good. When it comes to the matters of the martial arts world, not even the NSA wants to trip on this muddy water, then why are you two young ladies getting

involve into it?

Zhao Mingze?

Hearing this voice, Lin Shiqing and Xiao Qi were suddenly taken aback.

Previously in their eyes, this effeminate man was the close friend of Cai Shaohong, however now, not only he was hanging out together with the masked man, but together with him, also dared to hit the NSA soldiers!

This was really too terrible.

And of course, after an investigation, Lin Shiqing knew that now Nan Clan had only two people, one was called Nan Fang and the other person was known by the name Nan Feng who had already joined God Fist Gate. Then that meant, the person standing in front was certainly Nan Fang.

Luo Feng died, this news seemed to be hadn't yet spread, besides, Lin Shiqing wasn't a martial artist, so obviously she wouldn't know about it instantly.

“Pretty good, both of you are here.”

Lin Shiqing immediately loosened her tone, then her clear and witty words accompanied by a rhythmic up and down motion of her huge chest burst out in a soft voice: “Nowadays Pei Keang Group has exerted a great pressure on our country, if possible, I hope that you two would coordinate .....

“Sorry, we don't have time for that.”

Ye Feng immediately made an outright refusal, then felt a little funny: “Can a small company of the US dare to challenge such a big country? Anyway, I do not believe it.”

The reason why he didn't hurt these two women was because he just wanted to ask their next goal. Since he had already asked out, now the time had finally arrived to deal with them. Of course, making them unconscious in this rainstorm was very inappropriate, hence he decided

to throw them into the truck once they lose their consciousness.

Therefore he immediately moved towards them, wearing a mask, he was looking quite gloomy and terrible.

“What do you want to do?”

All of a sudden his fast movement sent a shiver down Lin Shiqing’s spine, in this wilderness, if his beastly nature would suddenly burst out or so on, then they two simply couldn’t do anything to resist!

However, surprisingly, she neither flinched nor shrank back, after all, she was here to seize him because he was at present very important for the whole country. She slipped her hand in her raincoat, took out an anaesthetic gun and directly aimed at him .....

But unlike her, Xiao Qi didn’t realise that something was wrong, instead, all grinning, she ran towards Ye Feng and said: “I have been looking for you for a long time, thank you for .....

Ye Feng looked her jumping with happiness, which made him feel quite helpless in his heart, this little girl, wasn’t she afraid of him?

“Just relax, you don’t need to be so polite.”

He gently waved his hand, then, looked towards Lin Shiqing: “You don’t need to take any petty action, anaesthetic guns don’t have any effect on me.”

These words suddenly startled her as she thought that how perfectly she had concealed this anaesthetic gun in her raincoat, so could it be that the opposite party had already discovered it? That was impossible, then that explained, he was certainly fooling her!

She didn’t think much, simply took out a fine anaesthetic gun and shot at him!

Puff.

However, Ye Feng conveniently pulled Xiao Qi in front of his body and she suddenly got shot behind by the anaesthetic bullet. Anyway, it wasn’t a deadly weapon, hence he didn’t mind taking her as a shield, besides,

this way he saved his hands from hurting her to make her unconscious.

“This .....

Xiao Qi got shot and immediately passed out on the spot.

Ye Feng supported her and carried her to the truck, then put her inside it to avoid the rainstorm.

“Now you are the next.”

He raised his head and gazed at Lin Shiqing, she was just an ordinary person, then why should he waste his time with her?

Just when he was about to make his move and get rid of her, suddenly nearby standing Long Wan'er felt something and her complexion terribly changed.

“Awful and it's already too late.”

Long Wan'er said in a soft voice, actually nobody needed her to remind, even Nan Fang could hear a sudden burst of intermittent footsteps and people's voices spreading from the surrounding, accompanied with several formidable forms!

The martial arts people, who were defending along the coast, had finally discovered that there were some unusual forms in this village, that the reason was why they encircled this place in abundance.

“Surround them all!”

A familiar and dense voice passed on from the surrounding.

Long Mo'ran!

## Chapter 194 - A Battle!

---

As soon as the voice of Long Mo'ran passed on, it simultaneously stole away the complexion of the people present on the scene.

Besides, Ye Feng had also not thought that the opposite party would show up such quickly. Hence, a bit puzzled, he glanced towards Lin Shiqing while thinking that if it were not for this woman who brought the NSA soldiers to intercept him, he wouldn't have definitely stayed this long here to attract the attention of Long Mo'ran and others.

However, even though he heard Long Mo'ran's voice, still didn't fluster a bit.

As for the reappearance of Long Mo'ran, he had already been psychologically prepared, especially now when he also had Long Wan'er by his side. So long as she, at the critical moment, would catch him off guard, could definitely launch a fatal blow on the opposite party!

He glanced at Long Wan'er and thought that whether she could do anything or not at the crucial time, it totally depended on her, after all, the opposite party was her father .....

However, Long wan'er didn't have such a strong self-confidence like he had, the moment she heard her father's voice, as a conditioned reflex, turned anxious right away.

Since her childhood, she had been under the shadow and control of her father, hence a fear of him had clutched at her heart with cold fingers. Although in the small fishing village, she rose vigorously to revolt against him, but that was a do or die situation where she was all certain that she was about to be killed by her own father. That was the reason why she showed courage and revolted.

Now, she was again together with Ye Feng at the same place, besides had also started practising Immortal Cultivation. At this moment, when

she was brimming with happiness and yearning for the time, right then she ran into him again, obviously, this made her unable to lift her fighting spirit and she didn't at all want to go all out with the opposite party.

“Just wait for an opportunity to act!”

Ye Feng sent a signal to her by making the shape of his mouth. If he had attained 20 years of Cultivation, then could have easily displayed an Immortal Technique by which, he could easily transmit voice just by using his Zhenqi. But unfortunately, he couldn't do that now.

It was said that in the martial arts world, if someone's Cultivation was very profound, then, he could also transmit sound secretly using his inner qi. However, it was definitely pretty difficult to grasp, or else Long Mo'ran didn't have to be loud in order to communicate with each other. So far, the only person he knew who could produce sound was Ye Wentian, while the rest of the martial artists couldn't achieve.

Long Wan'er when saw him signally her using his mouth shape, although at first she hesitated a bit, but then firmly nodded and ran up to his side.

However, Nan Fang didn't need Ye Feng to instruct him since he had already moved quietly and intelligently hid under the military truck's plate. This kid was indeed very smart, hence could be believed that at a critical moment, would certainly play a significant role.

Although Ye Feng was unable to promote his Cultivation that fast, but who said if someone wanted to kill a person, could only rely on his own strength and go for a direct solo combat?

If these three people co-ordinately launched a sneak attack on the opposite party, then their chances of success were on the higher side, besides, they might turn the table as well.

To defeat a superior enemy, now they only had this way!

On the other side, when Lin Shiqing heard some voices transmitting from around, she slightly felt relaxed in her heart, however, turned even

more anxious, because the people who were about to reach there were martial artists, who had never been in good terms with the NSA. Not to mention she was a woman, if Thunder would have been here, even he wouldn't have much right to speak.

She was suddenly struck by a brainwave, taking advantage of Ye Feng's distraction, she quietly moved sideways and ran away towards the truck, with the intention to take care of Xiao Qi while enjoying a nice play.

Ye Feng saw her moving but still didn't care about her, an ordinary woman couldn't raise any wave. Besides, now the most important thing was that he had no free time to pay attention to her.

He simply swept around and found that several martial artists had surrounded them from all directions. In addition, Xiao Yue, who was just saved, was also nearby hiding behind a dark tree, seemingly was also prepared to stand in a circle and watch the stirring scene.

As for Shu Shu, when she heard the voice of Long Mo'ran, her complexion changed at once and she promptly dodged towards the shadow and hid there. Although she had just started practising and had no Cultivation at all, but since was associated with Long Clan for last so many years, hence still had the awareness of the martial arts people.

Under the bright glowing headlights of the military truck, Ye Feng and Long Wan'er stood together firmly, while few heavily armed NSA soldiers were lying on the ground fully unconscious. While on the truck, Lin Shiqing was there to take care of Xiao Qi who was anaesthetized by her gun.

Due to the stormy weather, everything around seemed to be so chaotic, dark and damp. Even though Lin Shiqing and other top beauties were there, but still no one had the time to appreciate them.

Just within a moment, the entire open area before the truck was flooded with dozens of individuals, in addition to the Long people who were being led by Long Mo'ran, there were also several other disciples of the martial arts school.

But since there was Long Mo'ran, others couldn't dare to act rashly!

Long Mo'ran, clad in a white robe with a sword hanging around his waist, finally appeared before them. Holding a cold look, he came out from the crowd and stood right in front of Ye Feng and Long Wan'er.

Although before, he was blown away by the hurricane tornado, then later in the seabed received severe injuries, but again this time, holding a domineering look, accompanied with bubbling spirit, he appeared before them. Apart from a little blood stain on his white robe right around his chest area, there was hardly any change in him since the beginning.

Ye Feng again swept his Soul Search and sensed that the severe wound of the opposite party's chest had already a lot better, which made him conclude that the treatment method of the martial arts world was similarly quite impressive .....

“Mo Jiuge, today you can't fly away.”

Long Mo'ran narrowed his eyes and tightly glared at Ye Feng, who was standing in front wearing a face mask. His eyes revealed a sign of extreme hatred.

The current scene suddenly reminded him of the incident which had taken place 20 Years ago in the Mt. Luofushan cave, where he had exterminated Ye Clan. Just like today, he had then similarly surrounded Ye Yunfei, even at that time, his wife had stood on the opposite side .....

Raging with fury, not only he had beheaded Ye Yunfei but also didn't let off his wife and beheaded her as well at the same time, a big hatred must report!

Now, the masked man, Mo Jiuge stole away his daughter and the worst part of it, his daughter was also on the other side, which made his blood boil and he again exploded with rage.

But how the current situation was similar to the previous situation?

It was just that this time, his target was replaced with his own daughter.

Well, if such being the case, then how he had beheaded Ye Yunfei back



then, would repeat the same now with these two kids!

Long Mo'ran's mind was continuously thinking, making him abruptly pull out his waist sword and then he pointed at Ye Feng!

A good play would be staged soon, apart from these three people, the rest people were constantly talking in whispering tone, while pointing their fingers towards Ye Feng and Long Wan'er.

All of them had the feeling that this time, these two kids should surrender for their own good. Or else their strength had no way to be placed on par with Long Mo'ran, hence both would be certainly instantly killed by him.

Long Qing slovenly leaning against the side of the tree, glanced towards Long Wan'er's pretty and innocent face and slightly shook his head with regret. He still very much liked his niece, but today under this situation, even he couldn't do anything to support her.

While Long Zi, wearing a purple robe, while standing silently, was constantly looking at Ye Feng's face mask holding a complex look in his eyes. Actually, he wanted to let him be a part of his Clan, because this would enhance the strength of Long Clan. But after going through the experience in that small fishing village, he now clearly knew that there was no way Long Mo'ran would let this fellow off.

Gradually, seeing everyone was constantly whispering, Long Wan'er felt somewhat pressurised by this situation and her heart spontaneously turned very anxious.

“Even if I die, still won't let even the slightest scratch on your body!

Ye Feng said in a low voice, then, held her arm and pulled her behind his body in order to shield her.

Afterwards, he raised his head, his eyes looked through his mask confidently at Long Mo'ran: “Let's begin the battle!”

This was a pre-eminent declaration which acted as a bomb and immediately set off the mighty waves in the surrounding.

Did a young masked man actually dare to speak such words and directly challenge Long Mo'ran? Didn't he want to live further!

No matter who it was, even Lin Shiqing who was presently on the truck, when heard his statement, couldn't help but feel greatly astonished. Even her face favoured her and revealed a look of shock as she thought that this guy, really dared to confront Long Mo'ran?

## Chapter 195 - Suppressing Soul Sound Wave

---

Confronting Long Mo'ran was equal to courting death.

At least presently in the East China Sea, this was believed by almost everyone. Long Mo'ran had already mastered the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique, so those who had personally witnessed it, clearly knew how formidable he was!

However, Ye Feng was happy instead of being afraid of him.

Although he only had 12 years of Cultivation but was actually the so-called Immortal Cultivator who had all kinds of inconceivable supernatural powers, which the ordinary martial artists couldn't even imagine. A confrontation with Long Mo'ran was obviously something he couldn't completely handle by himself relying on his own strength. But, it wasn't also like he couldn't depend on various means to procrastinate time, so as to consume up the opposite party's inner qi.

Moreover, if compared with Long Wan'er, clearly his Cultivation was relatively low, however, the advantage he had over her was also very obvious and that was, he had the Ancient Dragon Sword Ring.

Besides, the methods of attack she knew were nothing but just two Immortal Techniques and they were Red Inflammation and Star Arrows. Once they were displayed out, then it would be very difficult to produce anything else to threaten the opponent while guarding oneself against any danger.

But Ye Feng was naturally different, he could congeal his Zhenqi out in the form of a sword and his each sword wield had the might to chop down anyone, in addition, his each Sword Qi was pretty deadly regardless of who the opponent was, Long Mo'ran was also not an exception!

So long as he could pose a threat, there was the possibility of defeating

the opposite party.

Not to mention that Ye Feng's goal was not to defeat him, but to constrain him, so that when his strength got exhausted after a while, then, Long Wan'er and Nan Fang could seize the opportunity to begin. Although in the Immortal World, handing over the rest part of the battle to others and that also in a life and death situation was greatly hated, but Ye Feng wanted to believe that Long Wan'er and Nan Fang were enough reliable.

It was really not good, although Long Wan'er immediately turned into the invisible mode, but still by doing so, she had no means to take Shu Shu away from this dangerous place. But fortunately, Ye Feng had also no intention to abandon a single one of those who was on his side.

At this moment, he felt that finally, he was bubbling with boiling passion, because ever since his rebirth to this world, this was going to be his first bitter encounter which relatively had the challenging battle.

“You stay back a little.”

He blocked in front of Long Wan'er, then said in a light tone: “Camouflage is not a martial arts technique.”

In the eyes of Long Mo'ran and others, Long Wan'er had already discarded her Dantian, so now was equal to an ordinary person without any fighting strength. So like this, let them be in a huge misunderstanding and at the critical moment, she could unexpectedly launch a fatal blow!

She clearly understood what he meant, but was still unavoidably a bit worried: “You must be careful.”

“Everything will be all right.”

Ye Feng nodded firmly.

Facing such an expert martial artist, perhaps using Invisibility Technique wouldn't be that effective. In addition, Ye Feng naturally wouldn't dare expose the fact that he knew the technique of making himself invisible since from the beginning.

His Zhenqi all of a sudden surged out of his body and the next moment, the golden sword congealed out.

Long Mo'ran narrowed his eyes, at this moment his eyes were covered with a colour of greed. Since he had seen him using this golden sword plenty of times, but could never figure out from where it used to appear.

There was no doubt the ring which was there in the masked man's hand was the most precious treasure! Even there was a high possibility that the present abilities of the masked man were derived from that ring only .....

Long Mo'ran's mind was constantly thinking about all these possibilities. Brimming with a greedy intention, now he, even more, wanted to kill him. At this instant, he wielded his sword and a bright white Sword Qi, while sweeping away as many things as possible, rushed towards Ye Feng in this rainstorm.

This was a probe.

Romantic Sword Technique, sweep away scattered clouds!

Even if it was only a probe, still Ye Feng could feel a murderous intention coupled with burning anger rushed towards him, creeping along with the Sword Qi. Now, he could neither dare to be negligent nor could dare to dodge it, because Long Wan'er was right behind him.

“Beheading Dragon!”

He also waved his golden sword, in a flash an icy-blue Sword Qi rushed out and collided with the approaching Sword Qi, immediately followed by a huge explosion, which led to a terrific surge in the air current!

The battle had finally started.

Ye Feng lightly moved and instantly the second layer of his Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace broke out, leaving behind several blurred afterimages all the way, bypassing half circle, he rushed quickly towards Long Mo'ran!

Whish!

The surrounded martial artists' scream rose from all directions, this guy could actually burst into such a terrific speed, it was indeed surprising! If his current speed was compared with the people present on the scene, then perhaps there was the only person who could challenge him and that was obviously Long Mo'ran!

Long Zi and Long Qing's complexion suddenly dignified, this boy actually had so many capabilities and they didn't even know about them.

Seeing Ye Feng getting close to him, Long Mo'ran's pupil spontaneously contracted, while his hand elegantly pulled his sword and precisely, quite rapidly punctured towards Ye Feng's direction.

“A good opportunity!”

Ye Feng saw this and his heart moved, immediately thought of a move which had been an always useless move.

Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave!

An exquisite martial arts technique from Asura Sect had long been extinct from this world. If one could assign his inner qi away from his body, then was known as “a roar that can shake underground spring”! Regardless of how effective it was, if could cause a good threat to Long Mo'ran, then it meant it was really effective. Besides, as long as there was an opportunity to defeat him, Ye Feng would certainly not dare to miss it.

Perhaps this could frighten the opposite party, then, Ye Feng's sword might have the fair chances of getting rid of him.

In the Immortal World, the fight never meant displaying as many techniques as possible by either side, even if two Immortal Cultivators had similar strength and Cultivation, but the fight was something which might decide in an instant who the winner was.

In the martial arts world, on seeing the use of martial arts techniques, one could undoubtedly say the more the martial artists used to comprehend techniques, the more flexibility they achieve in their use and the fighting became handier for them.

This was the reason why in the martial arts world of China, all major

sects used to value their people even when they didn't have any worth. Because in case their techniques were stolen by their rivals and in return, their rivals used the same technique against them, wouldn't it be quite tragic?

Ye Feng erupted with a magnificent speed, which was followed by a series of blurred afterimages and then, he quickly reached the sword punctured by Long Mo'ran.

At this instant, in a split second, he gathered his whole body's Zhenqi in the meridians and acupuncture points of his throat, then in accordance with Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave Technique, his Zhenqi gushed out of his mouth at a stretch.

Buzz! Buzz! Buzz!

Consecutively three sounds similar to the ghost wail burst out from his mouth, the power and terror of which all of a sudden spread toward the surrounding, all the way rolling up leaves, mud and even the rain curtain, these three sound waves changed their shapes!

Without any prior indication, this technique directly caught Long Mo'ran off guard, making him bear the brunt of these sound waves, as well as, literally scared him.

Asura Suppressing Soul Sound Wave lived up to its reputation!

Watching numerous martial artists couldn't remain standing steady and were forced several steps back, even over fifty percent of the people fell to the ground by his roar and finally fainted with blurred vision.

As a conditioned reflex, Lin Shiqing quickly covered her ears. Although she was in the truck, but still felt very sick because of these three acoustic shocks and simply wanted to throw up.

Long Wan'er went two steps back, similarly covered her ears, this technique of Sound Wave was an indiscriminating attack, regardless of who the enemy was, its effect enveloped the surrounding all people without any discrimination.

Nan Fang, who was lying under the truck, barely survived the shock.

Fortunately, the strength of his determination was outstanding, making him not to reveal his cloven foot until the very end.

Hiding behind a dark tree, both Xiao Yue and Shu Shu similarly covered their ears, but still these three consecutive ghostly roars made these two women feel sick and they also wanted to vomit.

A good opportunity!

While taking advantage of this moment, Ye Feng quickly displayed the Immortal Technique, Red Inflammation!

He opened his mouth and pounded a fireball directly aiming at Long Mo'ran.

This was called catching someone off guard!

Astonishing eruption speed! The sudden Suppressing Soul Sound Wave! Unfathomable and strange mouth which spat out a fireball!

A series of actions of Ye Feng hit Long Mo'ran directly when he was totally unprepared. However, the final fireball wasn't noticed by anyone around, because all of them were awestruck by the penetrating sound of the Suppressing Soul Sound Wave.

In a split second, Long Mo'ran's white robe was set on fire by the fireball!



## Chapter 196 - A group of Long Wan'er

---

Although Ye Feng displayed Red Inflammation, still he didn't relax, immediately raised his sword and rushed towards Long Mo'ran, directly aiming at his chest to stab him.

While on the other side, the moment the flame touched Long Mo'ran's cloth, its blazing temperature suddenly shook him up from the state of being deterred and as a result, in an instant, he released his inner qi out of his body and completely enveloped himself by forming a protective shield around!

It seemed that he was pretty aware of Ye Feng's sword approaching him, hence right on the spot he rolled on the ground and evaded it, simultaneously, drew support from the humid ground and put off his flame really fast.

This proved that indeed his Cultivation was very profound. Besides, in this weather, the Immortal Technique – Red Inflammation obviously couldn't pose any threat to his life.

But Ye Feng was unrivalled, couldn't let his opponent slip away like this at any cost. Therefore, he again wielded his sword, immediately an icy-blue Beheading Dragon Sword qi gushed out and while sweeping away everything along its way, rushed towards Long Mo'ran with a lightning fast speed.

Clang!

At this moment, Long Mo'ran promptly attached his inner qi to his sword and then brandished it, making his formidable inner qi firmly block the other Sword qi. There was indeed a big disparity between their Cultivation, no matter what Ye Feng did, really couldn't make up this gap.

“Little bastard, you surely want to die today but I won't make it that

easy for you!”

Long Mo’ran was brimming with extreme anger, stuck in an extremely difficult situation, suddenly he jumped up.

Because of just now rolling on the ground, his white robe had been completely stained and moistened with mud and bits of grass. In addition, his elegant and long tied up hair had also been burnt by the fireball. All these things were collectively making him look very miserable just like a distress beggar in this torrential downpour.

For a moment, he completely failed to see through Ye Feng’s attack and once again got caught into his “small tricks” and was thrown into such a distressed and embarrassing situation. So finally he decided that he wouldn’t let him die so easily and happily.

And to do that, what could be the most painful thing for a person? It was naturally watching his loved ones being tormented right in front of his own eyes, while he couldn’t do anything like a helpless person!

Long Mo’ran threw a glance at Long Wan’er and suddenly a dense look crawled on his face as he thought something: “Aren’t you two deeply attached to each other? In that case, my sword will stab her to death right here in front of you!

He said and moved at once.

His elegant form flashed, his speed was visibly much faster than Ye Feng. Holding his sword, he dashed all the way towards Long Wan’er and suddenly jabbed his long sword directly into her thigh!

He wanted to use his sword to torment Long Wan’er, simultaneously torment the masked man!

Until this time, all the surrounding martial artists, who were wonderstruck by the effect of Suppressing Soul Sound Wave, one after another recovered and gradually opened their eyes, however, what they suddenly saw was a shocking scene where Long Mo’ran stabbed his own daughter.

Did he really want to kill his daughter?

A group of people suddenly raised their voice as they felt that he was really too vicious. However when they thought of that incident when this man had beheaded his own wife without the slightest bit of hesitation, then felt that the current situation was not at all strange.

Long Zi and Long Qing wanted to jump out and block him, but it was quite obvious that based on their speed, they couldn't stop him.

So in desperation, both of them closed their eyes as they couldn't bear to see again.

Puff!

Although it seemed that Long Mo'ran's sword jabbed into her thigh, but surprisingly, his sword didn't cause any injury to her, not even a single drop of blood spilt out. Instead the entire person, just like a blue smoke in general, gradually dissipated right before them.

"Not good, is it an illusion?"

Long Mo'ran immediately reacted and quickly pulled his sword back, then looked around and suddenly saw dozens of Long Wan'er had appeared around him who looked exactly the same!

"Camouflage, unleash!"

Ye Feng wiped the rain water from the corners of his mouth, simultaneously, quietly faded his stature.

Just now he had displayed the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace, the eruption speed of which had already brought him quite closer to Long Mo'ran. He had already done a good preparation. At this moment, his Zhenqi dispersed in the forest all around and this way, he deployed the spell of Camouflage Technique.

He had already taken into consideration that the possibility of Long Mo'ran's surprise attack to kill Long Wan'er first was on higher side. That was the reason why he saw through his strategy and immediately, quite silently created a magic array.

All at once, the surrounding all sides became somewhat strange in the

eyes of Long Mo'ran.

Long Wan'er.

Long Wan'er.

Long Wan'er.

.....

He looked around and saw all the surrounding people had turned into her, sort of a group of Long Wan'er had surrounded him. But the point was, how the original masked man, Long Zi, Long Qing and other martial artists turned into her!

He all of sudden dignified, what was all this about?

Could it be that he was too tired, so had started hallucinating now?

No, it certainly was that little bastard who did this ghostly illusion, if that little bastard could actually spurt out fireballs from his mouth, then seemingly, whatever God Fist Gate's Luo Feng had said earlier was really the truth. In that case, it was certainly this fireball which had severely injured him back then!

Since he had seen all sorts of strange places, which made him realize that today's opponent was a little strange and scary, so he couldn't treat him similarly like confronting any ordinary martial artist.

His complexion turned gloomy because now he simply couldn't tell which one was real Long Wan'er and which was a dummy, just an illusion.

When Ye Feng saw him being all helpless, his heart finally felt huge relief, now he knew that the magic array was still efficiently playing its role.

Immortal Technique – Yin Soul Fake Body!

He made a fake body in a hidden place which was exactly the same as his main body. Then after, holding his golden sword, his fake body advanced towards Long Mo'ran so as to stab him right from the front.

And he himself, while being under the spell of Invisibility, gradually got close to Long Mo'ran and then quietly arrived behind him.

Apart from Long Wan'er, this cheap trick wasn't discovered by anyone present around and interestingly, the movement of his fake body made her think that he was simply insane!

Actually, holding a sword, he directly advanced towards Long Mo'ran and that also right from ahead in order to stab him. The flaw was too big! Even if Long Mo'ran might be a bit sluggish for some reason, but still if he would rely on his instinct alone, that was still sufficient enough to kill the masked man a hundred times!

At this moment, a trace of anxiety gradually crawled over Lin Shiqing's face, who was still on the truck.

In case the masked man was really Ye Feng and he died here, then what should she do?

From all kinds of information she had explored, based on that she had already made a conjecture that Ye Feng and the masked man, Mo Jiuge were the same person, but since she couldn't confirm that, therefore didn't yet tell anything to Xiao Qi.

But in case this was really the truth .....

Ye Feng was right here .....

If he was killed by Long Mo'ran .....

She immediately took out the anaesthetic gun in the bosom and quietly aimed at Long Mo'ran.

The intense scene was about to be staged any moment!

Ye Feng's fake body finally took a step to enter within the first five meters of Long Mo'ran, then waved his sword, aiming at his neck to sever it.

Seeing this action, surrounding martial artists sighed with regret as they thought that this young man, after all, was too young. This kind of action of paring his neck was a big step, which might not be chosen by

several people of the martial arts world. However, he actually chose this to deal with Long Mo'ran.

Just as expected, although Long Mo'ran couldn't see anyone in front, but relying on his intuition he easily sensed a sword was waved towards him right from ahead. Therefore, abruptly, he attached his inner qi to his sword to make it forceful enough to chop Ye Feng down into two sections.

However right at this time.

Puff!

Lin Shiqing went a step ahead and pulled the trigger of her anaesthetic gun, which unexpectedly hit Long Mo'ran in his back, making his stature stagnate.

Shua!

Right then, from under the truck, similarly, Nan Fang held the broken magical crossbow and pulled the trigger, aiming directly at Long Mo'ran's ass!

The sneak attacks back to back from two sides, made Long Mo'ran a little flurried for a moment, but for him, beheading Ye Feng right now was the matter of primary importance. Therefore, he didn't dodge to avoid these attacks, instead waved his sword to chop down Ye Feng into two parts!

“Bang” sound echoed.

Again his fake body was hit and again he turned into a blue smoke and dissipated right away.

Puff!

The arrow Nan Fang had hit, that had impartially hit Long Mo'ran in the buttocks, the demonic effect of which immediately began to spread in his entire body and simultaneously started suppressing his inner qi.

However, this was still not fatal.

Ye Feng's real body had long been hiding behind Long Mo'ran while being in an invisible mode. At this instant, he also moved and stabbed

his sword right into his back along with Nan Fang's strike.

Plop!

His sword suddenly pierced through his chest and immediately a flow of fresh blood gushed out from his body!

## Chapter 197 - Misses It Just By A Half Inch

---

When a series of adversity fell back to back, it stunned the surrounding audience.

What was the matter, even though the masked man was chopped down into two by Log Mo'ran's sword, but actually he changed into a blue smoke and disappeared? How was this possible, it was totally unscientific, wasn't he a human?

Immediately after, from the truck, Miss Lin also unexpectedly operated the anaesthetic gun. She was also quite stupid, why did she blend in this kind of thing? Now she had really annoyed Long Mo'ran, even several hundreds of Miss Lin was insufficient for the homicide, ah!

And then, something happened which sprinkled salt on his burn. Actually, an arrow also shot him in the buttocks, making some people instantly know what the matter was and it sent a shiver down their spine, the broken magical Crossbow was considered as the exorcist's exclusive weapon! Who could have thought that today, even an exorcist was also present there, but was still hiding somewhere and waiting for an opportunity to attack Long Mo'ran. Could it be that the masked man had spent money to invite him?

However, these were still nothing.

Because, even if all these attacks were added together, still were unable to kill Long Mo'ran. Even the weapon just now used was the so-called Broken Magical Crossbow, but still, it couldn't do anything remarkable on him since his Cultivation was very profound.

Surprisingly, he still had the considerable fighting strength left as before!

But at this time, a figure similar to a ghostly form suddenly appeared behind him, immediately after, a golden light flashed, followed by a



sword which stabbed him in his chest right from behind at one fell swoop!

In the rainstorm, this scene like a picture frame all of a sudden freeze in the eyes of the surrounding people. The elegant white and long robe of Long Mo'ran was completely dyed with fresh blood quite soon, which was bubbling out and running down on the ground mixing with the rain water.

The black dressed man with a face mask and the golden sword, he was exactly the same man 'Mo Jiuge' as the rumour spread.

How he floatingly went behind Long Mo'ran and thrust his sword into his chest?

Could it be that Long Mo'ran was such struck that now he wouldn't survive?

Was it going to be an inexplicable death at the hands of a young masked man?

Thunderstruck, Long Zi, Long Qing, hiding Shu Shu, as well as remaining other martial artists all at once opened their mouths widely in shock, it was a jaw-dropping situation for them as they were totally unable to believe that this scene genuinely occurred right before their eyes.

Extremely shocking!

However, in the field, only three people knew that the sword had missed its target.

It missed it only by a half inch.

This explained, how profound Long Mo'ran's Cultivation, accompanied with a rich fighting experience as well. Just relying on his intuition, his body happened to move aside a bit and avoided the deadly vital parts.

Ye Feng missed this superb chance just by a half-inch, or else he would have shaken up the entire martial arts world by know if he had really succeeded in killing him, but unfortunately nothing happened like he

expected.

He was aware of it.

But interestingly, Long Mo'ran also knew about it.

Moreover, with the help of Soul Search Technique, Long Wan'er also noticed this thing, but in spite of being stunned, she began to get ready to launch a strike with her all strength .....

Although Long Mo'ran was stabbed by a sword, but still it couldn't stop him. Immediately his inner qi started condensing in his both legs and then with a lightning fast speed, he quickly turned around and forcefully kicked a foot aiming at him. Seemingly it was the legendary Dragon Tail Technique!

The three supreme feats of Long Clan, Romantic Sword, Dragon Leg and Gentle Palm Technique, each one of them had the wondrous use.

Actually along with this kick "Dragon Tail", Long Mo'ran condensed his whole body's inner qi in his legs and threw a solid kick towards Ye Feng, at the same time, opened his mouth, squeezed out some more qi from his Dantian and the next moment launched the great "Dragon Cry Realm", it was again a sound wave attack!

Employing two-pronged approaches simultaneously to achieve a goal, Ye Feng's spirit was jolted out by the fierce dragon roar. But just within an instant, he responded, quickly wanted to pull his sword back and escape. However, before he could do anything, was actually got kicked by the opposite party heavily in his waist.

The formidable force of the foot all of a sudden invaded thoroughly within his body and kicked him in mid-air!

The sudden outbreak of Long Mo'ran once again changed the complexion of the surrounding people.

What a pity, that sword really couldn't kill him .....

Fortunately, the head of the Clan didn't die, besides, one must know it wasn't that easy to dispose him off like this .....

Now, the masked man would be screwed .....

“Coughs ...”

Since a sword had pierced his chest just now and immediately after that, the golden Zhenqi sword was pulled back suddenly, causing even more severe injuries to him, making him unable to bear and he coughed up a mouthful of fresh blood.

By this time, the effect of magic array finally gradually dissipated. Now in his eyes, that group of Long Wan'er finally resumed their original appearances, originally they were trees, other martial artists, even were large rocks .....

He raised his head and looked towards Ye Feng, who was just now severely kicked by him. Seeing him hadn't yet landed, his eyes once revealed the ominous light accompanied with a killing intention to kill him right here right now!

Just in a fraction of a second, he drew his right leg and immediately his left leg leapt as he wanted to kill Ye Feng right in midair.

However, right at this time, a dark blue arrow, carrying an infinite power, suddenly was shot towards him from behind the truck! Star arrow was quite bright just like stars in general, in addition, its appearance was not so common, actually, it was shot by Long Wan'er.

Although Long Mo'ran had received several serious injuries, but still he did everything to kick Ye Feng. While on the other side, ignoring other circumstances, Long Wan'er watched for quasi-opportunity and then, immediately congealed out a Star Arrow and projected it at one fell swoop.

Long Mo'ran saw that and suddenly his heart was aghast. He wanted to get away hurriedly, but since just now had been hit by an anaesthetic bullet as well as Broken Magical Crossbow, so finally they began to display their effect.

Suddenly his whole body turned stiff, making him feel all dizzy. The only thing he felt that the circulation of inner qi in his meridians had

become incomparably slow, so now he was only able to slightly lean his head.

Puff!

The Star Arrow suddenly stuck to his shoulder and ripped it apart from his shoulder. Actually, the powerful penetrating power directly shot his right arm with which he had held a sword!

“Ahh—”

Because of the tearing sort of pain, he couldn't bear but give out a blood-curdling screech, because this dark blue arrow, more than just penetration, had also shot his arm down!

The formidable force, carrying one of his arms along with it, fired towards the dark woods seaside and then quickly disappeared from the sight of the surrounding people. Now there was no trace of his right arm and searching in this kind of stormy weather was also extremely difficult.

Shockingly an arrow had ripped off Long Mo'ran's arm!

The surrounding all people quickly shifted their eyes towards the place from where the dark blue arrow was shot and were all surprised to see Long Wan'er was there behind the truck. It was just that, she had been preparing for a long time to launch this shot.

This sneak attack could actually produce such a terrible effect. That arrow really left everyone around with huge shock! Didn't Long Wan'er have already discarded her Dantian, then, just now, what was that technique all about?

Besides, neither that shot looked like a martial arts technique, nor she had held any weapon in her hand. In that case, how did she project that deep blue arrow?

Since Long Mo'ran had just now gone through such a heart-chilling experience and injuries, making his whole facial expression look completely abominable and hateful. He had never imagined that he, the God's favoured person and a renowned martial arts hero, would ever suffer such a big and humiliating loss and that also because of two young

kids.

He started raging with fury.

Because of the boiling anger in his heart, he almost lost his intellect and rationality.

Now he just wanted to catch the masked man together with Long Wan'er and tear them into shreds while they were still alive!

Bang!

Until this time, Ye Feng's body finally heavily fell to the ground, Long Mo'ran's foot was indeed too frightening, which had almost shattered his whole body's internal organs.

Seeing this, Long Mo'ran again made an effort under his foot to tread him upon. While totally ignoring his chest injury as well as his severed right arm, the whole person suddenly jumped high.

“Dragon in the sky!”

Descending Dragon Leg Technique was another move abruptly displayed by him. Taking his present Cultivation, the strength of such a foot was fully capable of crushing ten thousands of megaliths!

This was sufficient enough to crush Ye Feng under the foot.

If he was clouted by this foot, then considering his present Cultivation, he would absolutely die without any burial ground.

Did Long Mo'ran want to decide who bagged the victory?

Everyone's heart jumped to their throat while they were constantly gazing towards the field.

## Chapter 198 - Dragon Against Dragon!

---

The long white robe of Long Mo'ran was completely stained with blood, making him look like a dragon descended from the sky while extending his foot towards the ground where Ye Feng was, in order to crush him under the foot!

“Be careful!”

When Long Wan'er saw this situation, panic-stricken, she shouted out loud at once. But unfortunately, Ye Feng had just been severely injured by the same foot, so at this moment, he simply couldn't even get up from the lying position.

Shua!

Therefore without thinking much and further ado, she immediately raised her hand, followed by the Star Arrow which directly dashed towards Long Mo'ran targeting him, just like how the previous hit was.

The condensation speed of this arrow was quite rapid, so it also emerged out extremely fast, making Long Mo'ran dare not to underestimate it again. In any case, one of his arms was ripped off by the same kind of arrow just a moment ago, so could he still dare to be careless now?

With the help of Light Dodge Technique, his foot a bit rose from the ground. Actually, it was his emergency move by using which, he turned over and fell to the ground not far away from Ye Feng and this way, avoided this arrow.

The second appearance.

Thunderstruck, the surrounding people's eyes went wide open, they simply wanted to break their heads since were totally unable to understand what that dark blue arrow was which was shot by her.

Today, this battle seemed to have outrun their cognition.

Could it be that her inner qi congealed out in the form of these blue arrows? This could be possible, after all, some people could achieve the similar level in the martial arts world, however, they could only be those top experts who had already mastered the skill of releasing inner qi away from their bodies!

Long Wan'er had already abandoned her Dantian, so how could she still have inner qi within .....

“Really a hindrance.”

Long Mo'ran steadily stood on the ground, his severed arm's cuff was billowing in the rainstorm. He gazed towards long Wan'er with the eyes dripping with a frenzy of anger: “All right, I need to settle you first since you are in the way! ”

If he was compared with the previously met Slaughter God Ghost Hand, Qin Ge, it could be said that they were quite different.

Slaughter God Ghost Hand was just an ordinary martial arts expert with fifty years Cultivation, but as for him, although he had the same level of Cultivation, but was gifted with incredible talent, coupled with more than double strength. Even if they joined hands, the method that would emerge one after another incessantly, still couldn't strike to kill him.

Then after, he swept a glance towards Long Wan'er who was standing behind the truck, Lin Shiqing on the truck, as well as that unknown guy hiding underneath the truck.

Anyway the masked man had already been thrown in a seriously injured state, hence he couldn't constitute a threat to him. So might as well, he should think of disposing these few sinister off first, who were stabbing in his back one after another.

In addition to him, Long Zi and Long Qing also finally moved into action.

At the beginning, they had full confidence in Long Mo'ran, basically hadn't expected he would encounter such a big trouble, so they hadn't

done a good preparation beforehand to begin any moment.

When the favourable situation slipped away from Long Mo'ran's hand and on top of that, he also lost one of his arms, then Long Zi and Long Qing perceived that the situation was really not right. If under such circumstances, they didn't set into action, then perhaps it was highly likely that Long Mo'ran would have a tragic end!

They were the people of Long Clan, although didn't much appreciate Long Mo'ran's cold behaviour, but what undeniable fact was the status of their Clan in the martial arts world, which might get ruined in case Long Mo'ran got all beaten up today by these few kids.

Long Mo'ran was already seriously battered which was a very big blow to the whole Long Clan.

The two people moved to hurriedly coordinate with Long Mo'ran and prepare attacks from both sides, one on Long Wan'er and the other on the "exorcist" hiding under the truck. As for already knocked out Ye Feng, similarly, they didn't need to care about him right now.

Long Mo'ran had mighty 50 years of Cultivation, while the masked man only had a little more than 10 years of Cultivation, so how could he bear that foot? Although he didn't die but was very badly injured, hence he didn't need to be taken seriously as a threat at this point of time.

Apart from this, Long Wan'er could unexpectedly release this kind of dark blue oddly arrows, making them tighten their guards at all times.

On the other side, other Long people one after another dispersed in abundance and tightly surrounded the open area, at the same time they also sent a few guys to the surrounding area to carry out the search work, in order to find back Long Mo'ran's arm somehow.

Hiding behind the dark tree, Xiao Yue and Shu Shu all of a sudden felt that the situation had turned suddenly unfavourable for them, what if were discovered by these Long people .....

"I must personally kill her."

Long Mo'ran said in a tone dripping with an unparalleled killing



intention, afterwards he paced towards her, simultaneously Long Zi and Long Qing also approached from another two directions and surrounded her, letting her no scope to escape.

However, still, Long Wan'er's beautiful two pupils declined to depart from Ye Feng who was still lying on the ground.

She was truly concerned about him, but it would be better to be concerned about herself at this moment.

“You still have free time to see him?”

Long Mo'ran tracked her vision and instantaneously his complexion turned denser than ever. Immediately, he started condensing his whole body's inner qi in his legs while holding the sword in his other arm. This time, he couldn't display any sword technique, but could easily display leg techniques, which were still dangerous enough to kill anyone!

Long Zi and Long Qing although somewhat couldn't bear this thing, but just for the sake of their Clan, still blocked her route to prevent her from running away.

While at present, the surrounding people were anticipating that as long as one more second passed by, she would certainly lose her life and that also at the hand of her own father and his leg technique!

“Coughs ...”

At this very moment, nobody from the crowd noticed that Ye Feng's hands had already set into action and the golden light had also appeared, that was the Holy Cure Technique! The injury caused by Long Mo'ran's foot started getting healed quickly. Although, he still shouldn't act now but didn't have the time to continue resting for the treatment.

He wouldn't allow anyone to put his hands on those who were precious to him!

If they wanted to hurt Long Wan'er, then they had to step on his corpse first to get pass him.

Therefore he staggered to get up, relying on what he had understood

about few leg techniques of Long Mo'ran which were displayed by him every now and then, his hands turned into the claw, immediately followed by Zhenqi which started condensing quickly and then, in an instant, the majestic momentum took place!

Ye Feng finally touched the doorway of Dragon Claw Hand Technique's third layer.

Two long dragon-shaped claws gradually condensed out in front of him, showing the golden yellow colour. And just like the resounding dragon cry produced by Long Mo'ran just a moment ago, they swept across from Ye Feng's location.

The comprehension layers of many martial arts techniques meant the first layer was the primary level, while in the second layer they could assign their inner qi away from their bodies and as for the third layer, they could then change their forms.

And in the martial arts world, few people could practice the third layer of some techniques, however, at this moment, the level Ye Feng achieved was similar to what Ye Wentian had expected at the beginning.

When two Dragon Claw Hands emerged out of thin air, it left the surrounding all people with stunned and shocked expression!

Dragon against Dragon!

Just a moment ago, when Long Mo'ran had displayed Descending Dragon Leg Technique along with a penetrating Dragon Cry, could it be that it made the masked man comprehend something to the extent where he even made a breakthrough and entered the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand at one fell swoop?

On seeing this, Lin Shiqing covered her mouth and almost cried out in alarm, but what did she actually see? Two light golden dragon claws! Was it an illusion which appeared in this stormy weather? But that sound was obviously the cries of Dragon?

Being a member of Lin Clan, she knew the existence of martial arts world, also knew that there were plenty of highly skilled martial arts

experts who could fly up to the eaves and walls, dodge the water and so on. However, the thing she never expected was that martial artists could actually attain this point.

His both arms extended into two dragon claws, which far exceeded her cognitive range.

“If this boy really succeeds in escaping this calamity, then certainly would have an extremely bright future in the coming days!”

This kind of idea was cropping up in the hearts of almost everyone present on the scene.

The moment Long Mo’ran thought of utilising his full strength to display Dragon Leg Technique and kick Long Wan’er to death, right then, suddenly felt something had firmly grabbed his body, making him unable to move.

Arduously, he turned back and saw two light golden dragon claws holding him. Under the effect of broken magical crossbow and anaesthetic bullet, his strength was already far inferior to his previous state, hence was radically incapable of shaking off the fetter of this pair of dragon claws.

“Get lost!”

Ye Feng displayed the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand, extended his both hands, tightly held him from behind and then made an effort to toss him.

Bang!

Those two dragon claws firmly grabbed him first, then, lifted him up and knocked him against the military truck with formidable strength, making the entire truck shake as if was about to turn over.

Swish!

Then after, he pounded his both claw hands in the air, Cloud style!

With a howling sound, Long Mo’ran was suddenly raised in midair and the next moment was heavily smashed down on the ground!

A loud bang burst out!

Along with it, a deep pit all of a sudden got formed in the damp ground of woods because of such a heavy smash .....

## Chapter 199 - The Last Opportunity [Blast 1]

---

The facial expression of almost everyone present on the spot changed at once.

Long Mo'ran was actually pounded on the ground by the masked man!

As for Long Wan'er, a trace of astonishment coupled with delight peeped out from behind her beautiful facial cast, because Ye Feng's sudden performance was too surprising to digest!

While Long Zi and Long Qing were totally startled and in bewilderment they blankly looked at each other. They still quickly advanced towards Long Wan'er so as to attack her from both sides. One of them had put forth his palm while other his leg, clearly they had resorted to Gentle Palm Technique and Dragon Leg Technique respectively.

If only she fell into their clutch, they could threaten the masked man and prevent him from acting rashly.

However, right at this time, the two light golden Dragon Claws raided over and suddenly grabbed them quite firmly!

Both of them had 30 years of Cultivation, so there was no way the current Ye Feng could be an eligible match for them. However, all of a sudden, they were detained by his dragon claws and instantly were seized on the spot, totally unable to move even an inch.

“Go away!”

Ye Feng roared aloud, simultaneously waved his hands, followed by a strong force which suddenly threw them away separately and later they heavily fell to the ground next to the tree trunk.

Afterwards, Ye Feng's footsteps moved and suddenly the second layer of Rapid Shadow Immortal Trace burst out with a terrific speed and in a

split second, he arrived in front of Long Wan'er.

His Zhenqi then dissipated.

The light golden dragon claws gradually disappeared. Although now he could display the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand Technique, but the enormous consumption of his Zhenqi while using this layer was extremely startling. And at this situation when he had mere 12 years of Cultivation, he couldn't maintain it for a long time.

Anyways, without further ado, he quickly pulled a small coral out from his bosom and started absorbing it.

In the present situation, not having Zhenqi within his body was extremely dangerous. Fortunately, he still had remaining four small corals which were enough to supplement his Zhenqi four more times. Obviously, the prerequisite was he must have enough time to absorb their spiritual energy.

Seeing Ye Feng being so frantic and acting so boldly to keep those two men off from Long Wan'er and that also by totally ignoring his own safety, sitting inside the truck, Lin Shiqing's heart was suddenly taken aback, the masked man was really too determined.

She couldn't help but recall the incident of the abandoned factory in Yanjing where she had gone through a bitter experience. However, at the time of the explosion, she was actually pressed by this masked man under his body so as to shield her.

But Ye Feng's Dragon Claw Hand not only dragged Long Mo'ran on the ground but Long Qing and Long Zi couldn't remain unaffected and soon were lifted up and also thrown badly. This incident had really stunned the surrounding all martial artists, this masked man was unexpectedly so formidable!

Even if Ye Feng was replaced by any one of them, still nobody could attain the level which he had already achieved.

At this time, a group of God Fist Gate's people also finally caught up there driven under the leadership of the white-bearded old man, Xu

Xiaoyu and coincidentally happened to see Ye Feng casting the third layer of Dragon Claw Hand. It's divine and invincible might instantly stole away the colour of their faces, making them look quite ugly.

When did the martial arts world have this kind of mysterious figure?

Perhaps the whole martial arts world would soon welcome a great change .....

“How are you now?”

Long Wan'er's whole face was covered with a worried expression as she moved a step forward to support him.

“Fortunately okay .....

He nodded and replied in just two words, however, the complexion of both of them actually simultaneously changed.

Because both of them had Soul Search Technique, so they almost simultaneously sensed that Long Mo'ran, who was just now pounded in a deep pit, had stood up again and like a deranged, heavily stamped his foot.

“Sword!”

At this instant, Long Mo'ran roared loudly, at the same time instantly sprang up from the deep pit and re-stood on the ground.

Upon seeing this, Long Qing responded at once, promptly loosened his waist sword and threw it towards him.

Pow!

Long Mo'ran quickly grasped the sword hilt, although blood was still dripping from his severed arm, still, his pair of eyes had a terrorising cold look.

Finally, he had taken the decision to put forth the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique now. Though he had never thought a masked man could compel him to this extent. But if this kid wasn't wiped out now, then would certainly become a huge trouble in the future!

In the martial arts techniques, the first layer was considered as a beginner level, the second layer meant comprehending the process of releasing inner qi out of one's body, while the third layer was all about transforming its shape.

The same applied for Romantic Sword Technique.

Suddenly his mind went into action and the next moment, the temperature of entire woods as if dropped several degrees all of a sudden. Tree leaves as well as torrential rain curtain, all got attached to a layer of thin frost, even water in the muddy land began condensing into ice.

This sword technique had altogether four moves.

Sweep away scattered clouds, flower falls – autumn frost, Snow Reflecting Sunset, Descending moon wild song were mainly the four styles of Romantic Sword Technique.

Long Mo'ran stood elegantly, completely motionless while holding a sword tightly in his hand. At this moment, his sword tip gently trembled, followed by a cold wind Sword Qi dashed towards Ye Feng, accompanied with a huge gale which simultaneously blew along with it and soon spread in the entire woods.

Sitting in the truck, Lin Shiqing was suddenly blown by this strong gale and was not even able to open her eyes. Even the surrounding martial artists were unexpectedly swayed and lost their balance.

If anyone comprehended the third layer of a martial arts technique, that meant he was an extraordinary genius!

“Beheading Dragon!”

Simultaneously Ye Feng's golden sword congealed out icy-blue Sword Qi.

Kiss it!

However, his Sword Qi – sweep across scattered clouds instantly destroyed Ye Feng's Beheading Dragon sword Qi at one fell swoop, followed by a vigorous attack from the lightning which again rushed



towards him directly from ahead.

However, having Long Wan'er behind him, he didn't dare to dodge it, could only leap and let himself got hit by the sword.

Puff!

Although the strong wind Sword Qi was divided into two halves by Ye Feng's sword, but still possessed the formidable strength and influence with which it stabbed Ye Feng in his waist and thighs fiercely.

Two severe wounds, but fortunately weren't fatal.

But again, without giving him any breathing time, Long Mo'ran's next sword, Flower fall – autumn frost immediately dashed towards him. As the Sword Qi surged up violently, the frost rimed everywhere, making the snow-white frostwork look similar to a spider web in general, which burst out from soles of his feet and spread in the surrounding open area.

One after another invisible Sword Qi, partnered with the frostwork, rushed towards Ye Feng while cutting off several trees along the way. Even the bursts of strong gale also crept along with it and spread all around.

If this scene wasn't seen by the people with their own eyes, then some people would never believe that martial artists could produce such a terrible effect.

“Withdraw!”

The white-bearded old man, Xu Xiaoyu immediately waved his hand and ordered to retreat since he saw the terrorising effect of Long Mo'ran's sword. For him, he couldn't let the disciples of God Fist Gate suffer any loss while rounding the view.

Quite soon, the entire open area was about to turn into the ocean of Sword Qi, so in case they didn't retreat, then most likely it would bring disaster to these small fishes!

In an instant, the whole crowd, who was rounding the view, drew back.

“It could be said that if inner qi is practised to its extreme peak,

similarly can lead the strength of the world, but if compared with Zhenqi, it's much more difficult than inner qi .....

Ye Feng's mind was struck by a brainwave, so he simply clenched his teeth and stuck his chest out.

“Quickly run!”

Anxiously, Long Wan'er shouted loudly, simultaneously stepped forward to grab his arm and pull him away.

“I can't go.”

Ye Feng said while proliferating his Soul Search around and sensed that behind him, Lin Shiqing was there on the truck trying to drag unconscious Xiao Qi and leave this place, but her strength was too little. Besides, Nan Fang was still under the truck and because of the narrow and small space, he couldn't immediately leave this place.

In case Ye Feng walked away at such a critical moment, then certainly these three people would be cut into pieces by Long Mo'ran's Sword Qi!

Within the scope of his Soul Search, Sword Qi was increasing rapidly. Although naked eyes couldn't see them, but Ye Feng grabbed Long Wan'er and pushed her away, simultaneously, waved his golden sword and tried to quickly intercept these Sword Qi attacking him one after another.

Puff! Puff!

He although could feel Sword Qi was attacking him accompanied with frost, but his movement was actually not able to keep up with, hence totally failed in blocking these Sword Qi which were shot at him from different directions and in a while, was cut and bruised all over.

But still, he didn't flinch back, rather firmly stood in-situ to block those sharp edges and invisible Sword Qi.

In order to ambush to kill Long Mo'ran, there still was an excellent opportunity.

But that also was the last opportunity.

To see whether Ye Feng could take hold or not .....

Penetrating the cluster of Sword Qi, he tightly gazed towards Long Mo'ran.

A contemptuous smile was there on Long Mo'ran's face as if was thinking: No matter how talented you have been, still don't want to die in my hands?

Gradually, he moved closer to Ye Feng!

## Chapter 200 - Ye Feng? Ye Feng! [Blast 2]

---

The whole audience was noiselessly watching a series of Sword Qi, which were dancing in the air a moment ago, gradually dissipated

Ye Feng raised his head, meanwhile also felt that the numbness had started acting on his body, but still had the strength left to launch his final blow. Though he was bleeding heavily, but if he couldn't grab this last chance, then today's outcome would be so doomed.

He swept the Soul Search Technique around the surrounding area.

People's eyes were all stuck at his body completely covered with blood, which left them totally stunned. Actually they couldn't think through why he didn't dodge, instead chose to stand in situ and resist those swift and fierce Sword Qi.

The field was in a complete disorder.

Several big trees were snapped off one after another, the ground had multiple traces of scratch marks caused by Sword Qi, which awfully quickly got filled up with rain water and instantly got frozen into ice.

By this time, Lin Shiqing finally left the truck while holding anesthetic Xiao Qi along and then, hid behind a tree. Her pretty face was scouting around from across a big fallen tree holding a complex look in her eyes. She looked towards the field where Ye Feng was.

She knew that he could have easily escaped because just a moment ago when Long Wan'er tried to pull him and escape, in return was pushed away by him.

But he didn't leave the spot.

Besides, on seeing plenty of ugly scratches delimited by Sword Qi all over the military truck, she understood, if it was not for him who stood there to resist, she and Xiao Qi would have already died by now.

Just for them, he was willing to suffer from such a heavy injury?

She really couldn't believe that she and Xiao Qi were that important to him, but when she thought about it, apart from this point, couldn't figure out the other reason why he persisted in blocking those attacks.

She certainly didn't know that just a moment ago, before she stepped out of the truck, Nan Fang crawled out from under the truck, then, bounced and climbed on a nearby treetop, without attracting the attention of anyone in this darkness.

Putting on the exorcist's electrical powered jumping boots, holding the Broken Magical Crossbow, he was also like a major combat power now. But unfortunately, the arrows of his Crossbow couldn't play any major role against Long Mo'ran.

At this point, he just hid there and continued waiting for the right time.

Meanwhile, he took out several flying knives quietly in his hands, although he had just started practicing Crying Ghost Sword Technique, even if he displayed it, still couldn't produce any big effect. However, it could still be used to distract Long Mo'ran when needed.

When Long Wan'er was pushed away by Ye Feng, though she wanted to go all out with Long Mo'ran, but then changed her mind as she thought that it still wouldn't not bring any change to the current situation.

Even after adequate protection, whether it was the Immortal Technique Red Inflammation or Star Arrows, neither of them would have any major effect on him. Instead, if she used multiple techniques frequently, then most likely her identity as Immortal Cultivator could soon get exposed.

Comprehending the third layer of martial arts moves and Immortal Cultivation were little similar, for instance, the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique displayed by Long Mo'ran.

Therefore a while ago when she had shot Star Arrows twice, perhaps that was the reason why it didn't let anyone feel something strange and have doubts. Anyways, based on her talent, comprehending the third

layer of martial arts techniques was a simple thing. However, if used multiple times, perhaps would be discerned.

At this time, after few steps, she finally drew back in the dark woods, then, silently moved towards the place where Shu Shu was so as to ensure her safety.

A group of Long people were already spread in the surrounding area to find Long Mo'ran's severed arm. Because of which Shu Shu was extremely anxious and in nervousness was even unable to breathe, until the arrival of Long Wan'er.

In the utter darkness of woods, the two women leant on each other while constantly paying attention to the surrounding situation.

However, Long Wan'er's Soul Search was still active and was completely concentrated on two people, Ye Feng and Long Mo'ran as she wanted to pay attention to every moment diligently. If only she got a chance, then would continue to display Immortal Techniques and would try to tackle Long Mo'ran from a distance!

On the other side, the disciples of God Fist Gate who were being headed by Xu Xiaoyu, all retreated quite far and when Sword Qi stopped raining, then loosened their breath and once again surrounded the area.

Xu Xiaoyu stood to one side while locked his gaze on Ye Feng.

As for him, he actually wanted Ye Feng to kill Long Mo'ran right here right now, then after he would personally dispose him of. This way, not only he would get rid of an archenemy in the arena, but also would take revenge for Luo Feng.

He was too disinclined to think about it anyway, simply shifted all blames on Ye Feng for Luo Feng's death.

As for stealing away the big Coral King by Ye Feng and suffering the loss of five to ten years of Cultivation, for an expert like him, it was not as important as Luo Feng was for them.

Besides, it must be said Luo Feng although was at the door of his youth, still had already comprehended the skill of assigning away inner

qi from his body and that also quite perfectly!

This time God Fist Gate totally failed to reap any benefit, instead lost a lot of manpower. Even if he was the elder of God Fist Gate, still after going back he couldn't take all the consequences.

In addition, other public figures of the martial arts world, one by one pointed their fingers towards the field.

No matter how the situation took the turn today, the masked man had already brought disaster on Long Mo'ran, not only he ripped off his arm, but also compelled him to move to his last resort and display the third layer of Romantic Sword Technique, which was enough praised in the arena.

If today the masked man could survive, this matter would certainly bring about a mighty change!

Perhaps the whole martial arts world would be jolted out!

Unfortunately, even if masked man turned out successful in eliminating Long Mo'ran, but could never escape the violent treachery of Xu Xiaoyu ..... a group of people were already gazing at Xu Xiaoyu and also noticed the murderous intention his eyes were brimming with.

But today Ye Feng was totally unable to escape even with wings!

One step.

Two step.

Holding a long sword, Long Mo'ran advanced towards him, his long white robe was fluttering, immersed in the blood in this heavy rain, he looked like a bloodthirsty flagitious.

“Don't have strength left?”

A contemptuous smile spread on Long Mo'ran's face, followed by a bright white Sword Qi which again swept towards Ye Feng from quite afar.

The numbness had already engulfed Ye Feng's whole body so he didn't want to escape!

In case he escaped, then would have no strength to launch the final blow .....

Puff!

But right at this moment, a figure dashed out from nearby dark woods and at the critical point, stood in front of Ye Feng to block the Sword Qi.

In an instant, that bright white Sword Qi cut through the figure's chest. Actually the figure was the masked youth of Taiji Palace!

Until now, Ye Feng didn't know his name, but helped him cure the burn scars on his face. However now, this boy once again bravely stepped forward to help him block a sword!

With a "Bang", youth fell to the ground.

That sword was surprisingly quite skillful which actually cut off his heart's arteries at one fell swoop. Unfortunately this time, he couldn't survive.

"This guy again!"

Long Mo'ran's anger was suddenly triggered!

In the small fishing village, he was the one who had blocked Long Mo'ran's sword aimed at Shu Shu back then and now once again, he ran out to block his Sword Qi which was shot at the masked man.

"Hello ..... Long Mo'ran ....."

Ye Feng 's few gently uttered words suddenly pulled the attention of Long Mo'ran over.

These words, actually he didn't pretend to be gloomy, but said in Ye Feng's true voice, at the same time, placed his hand on the black grimace mask as if all prepared to take it off any moment.

In order to survive, he must seize the last opportunity.

Even if he exposed his identity for this reason, still he would have no scruples!

Swish!



In the torrential rain, he unexpectedly took his mask off from his face.

A delicate and gentle face all at once appeared in front of everyone, however, this time, it wasn't the effect of Camouflage Technique, rather was the true appearance of Ye Feng.

Long Mo'ran was all of a sudden stupefied.

Ye Feng?

Ye Feng!

“Good opportunity!”

Although Ye Feng was sadly looking at the body of Taiji Palace's youth, but the consciousness of his Soul Search had locked on Long Mo'ran all along. So by taking advantage of the opposite party's bewilderment, he immediately congealed out the golden sword, followed by Beheading Dragon Sword Qi, which swiftly dashed towards him!

Shua Shua Shua!

Immediately after that, one after another, several flying knives were shot directly towards Long Mo'ran from another direction. It was actually Nan Fang who shrieked and howled wildly with deep veneration!

“Star Arrow!”

In the meantime, Long Wan'er also took advantage of the opportunity and promptly shot a dark blue arrow towards him.

Tripartite converging attack!

Long Mo'ran was already in a state of shock by the sudden and unexpected revelation of Ye Feng's identity, however still, he suddenly responded but found that no matter where he would run, would face a fatal attack for sure!

Over!

He suddenly felt as if his blood turned cold.